527

CURIALIA:

OR

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT

OF

SOME BRANCHES

OF THE

ROYAL HOUSHOLD, &c. &c.

VOLUME I.

CONSISTING OF THREE PARTS; VIZ.

I. A Diſſertation on the *obſolete Office* of *The* ESQUIRES *of the* KING's BODY;—and on the original *Nature*, *Duty*, &c. of *The* GENTLEMEN *of the* KING's *Moſt Honourable* PRIVY-CHAMBER.

II. An Account of the KING's *Honourable* BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS from its Eſtabliſhment to the preſent Time.

III. A ſimilar Account of the YEOMEN *of the* KING's GUARD, from the Date of its Inſtitution.

By *SAMUEL PEGGE, ESQ.*

LONDON,

Printed by J. NICHOLS, Printer to the SOCIETY of ANTIQUARIES;
And ſold by B. WHITE and Son, at Horace's Head, in Fleet-ſtreet,
J. ROBSON, New Bond-ſtreet; LEIGH and SOTHEBY, York-ſtreet,
Covent-Garden; and T. PAYNE, junior, Mews Gate.

MDCCXCI.

19

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM

528

CURIALIA:

OR

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT

OF

SOME BRANCHES

OF THE

ROYAL HOUSHOLD. &c. &c.

PART I.

CONSISTING OF

TWO DISSERTATIONS

ADDRESSED TO THE

President of the Society of Antiquaries, London.

viz.

I. *ON THE OBSOLETE OFFICE* of the ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY.

II. *ON THE ORIGINAL NATURE, DUTY,* &c. of the GENTLEMEN of the KING's most Honourable PRIVY CHAMBER.

By SAMUEL PEGGE, ESQ;

LONDON,

Printed by J. NICHOLS, Printer to the SOCIETY of ANTIQUARIES;
And sold by T. PAYNE and Son, Mews Gate; B. WHITE and Son,
at Horace's Head, in Fleet-ſtreet; J. ROBSON, New Bond-ſtreet;
and LEIGH and SOTHEBY, York-ſtreet, Covent Garden.

MDCCLXXXII.

ERRATA.

PART I.

p. 66, l. 17, for *Intrée* read *Entrée*.

PART II.

The Obliterations which the Reader will find in pp. 21, 22, 60, 77, and 98, arose from the primary Intention of the Writer to have publiſhed Part II. and Part III. together, and were chiefly References to the third Part;—except in one Inſtance (p. 77) which was a Miſtake not detected till the Sheet was printed off.

p. 13, l. 25, for *our* read *one*.

p. 14, l. 25, dele *was*.

p. 76, l. 10, of the Memoir, and p. 111, l. 13, in the Liſt of the Captains of the Band, for *Henry* (Wentworth) read *Thomas*. N. B. Heath (who is quoted p. 76) led the Writer into the Miſnomer.

p. 88, l. 5, from the bottom, dele *that*.

PART III.

p. 19, in the firſt Note, for fol. 94 read 194.

p. 32, l. 6, for *trival* read *trivial*.

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM

TO

THE KING,

THE FOLLOWING WORK IS, BY ROYAL INDULGENCE, HUMBLY INSCRIBED

BY

HIS MAJESTY'S

MOST FAITHFUL SUBJECT

AND

DUTIFUL SERVANT

SAMUEL PEGGE,

One of the GROOMS *of His* MAJESTY'S

Most Honourable

PRIVY CHAMBER.

ДНЕВНИКЪ

ВЪ

ПУТЕШЕСТВІИ

ОТЪ

To the PRESIDENT, VICE-PRESIDENTS, and FELLOWS of the Society of ANTIQUARIES, LONDON.

GENTLEMEN,

I OUGHT amply to apologize for withdrawing the following Pieces from your Publications after the favourable Reception they have met with at your hands; and have only to urge, that I thought it more becoming my *Office*, as well as more reſpectful to the KING, who has vouchſafed to accept them, that they ſhould appear as an independent Work.

I have not the Vanity to lay any Claim to publick Favour—and therefore only look to the very few who may be attached to ſuch Subjects from Curioſity, Office, or Choice—

Contentus paucis lectoribus—— HOR.

though I confeſs to have had the Preſumption to ſhelter myſelf under the Size and Type of your ARCHAEOLOGIA, with a modeſt Wiſh that theſe Papers may (by ſome at leaſt) be conſidered as collateral Appendages to that learned and valuable Work.

As I am not without Hopes of adding to this little Publication, as Opportunity and Documents may offer, I have ſtyled it PART THE FIRST;—and after returning my Thanks to ſuch Gentlemen of the Society, and to my Friends in general, who have hitherto aſſiſted me with their Communications, I have the Honour to be,

GENTLEMEN,

Your obliged

And moſt obedient Servant,

SAMUEL PEGGE.

Whitehall,
April 23, 1782.

CURIALIA:

OR,

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT, &c.

DISSERTATION I.

ON THE OBSOLETE OFFICE

of the

ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY *.

To the Preſident of the Society of Antiquaries, London.

SIR,

AMONG the various ſubjects which attract the attention of your learned Society, thoſe, I ſhould imagine, cannot be unacceptable which relate to any ancient branch of the *houſhold* of your *Royal* PATRON; and as ſeveral memoirs are found in the ARCHAEOLOGIA, conſiſting of matter of this kind, I beg leave through your favour, to offer, with deference, ſome account of the ancient and now obſolete office of THE ESQUIRES

* Read at the Society of Antiquaries, May 20, 1779.

of the KING's BODY. As the ſubject is but juſt out of the reach of *vivâ voce* information, it may perhaps be thought ſcarce ripe enough for inveſtigation; but I believe I may venture to aſſert that the *nature*, *duty*, &c. of theſe *officers* are as little known, as if they had been diſcontinued for ages, though they were in being at the beginning of the preſent century. I incline then to believe, Sir, that the ESQUIRES of the BODY were an appendage to the KING as being a KNIGHT; and as every knight had anciently *two* ESQUIRES attending him in an intimate degree, ſo the KING might very well be intitled at leaſt to *four*, which was no more than was claimed by every PEER, while a *knight-bachelor* had but two *. According to Mr. Camden, "One of the ESQUIRES carried the knight's *hel-*
"*met*, the other his buckler, and were his inſeparable compa-
"nions, holding lands of him by *eſcuage* in the ſame manner as
"the KNIGHT held of the king by *knight's-ſervice*." Theſe are Mr. Camden's words, and yet I cannot but think, though I am aſhamed to diſpute ſo high an authority, that he has been led into an error, and that the ESQUIRES bore the KNIGHT's *lance* and buckler, and not the *helmet* and buckler. I take my ground for this preſumption from the appearance which the CHAMPION affords us on CORONATIONS (perhaps the only repreſentation now to be had of a KNIGHT arm'd *cap à pié*) who

* Prefatory Diſcourſe to Camden's Britannia. Lord Audley had *four* ESQUIRES at the battle of Poictiers 1356, and his liberality to them for their ſervices is on record, where he transfers to them the bounty which EDWARD *the Black Prince* had beſtowed upon himſelf. [v. Echard's Hiſt. of Eng.] And Mr. Selden mentions an earl of Saliſbury who had *four* ESQUIRES in the reign of king Richard II. [Tit. Hon. p. 834. edit. 1631.] Sir Henry Spelman likewiſe tells us in general terms that the *nobility* had anciently *four*, when *two* only were allowed to *knights-bachelors* [Proceres quatuor, equites aurati duos, [ſc. armigeros] habuiſſe dicuntur]. Gloſſ. in voce *Armiger*.

is

is preceded by two ESQUIRES, one of whom bears his *lance* and the other his *ſhield* *.

WE may add to this, that the very terms ARMIGER and SCUTIFER, which were their ancient proper titles, imply rather the bearing of the offenſive and defenſive weapons of the KNIGHT than any part of his *body armour*, and point directly at the *lance* and *ſhield:* and further it can eaſily be diſcerned that the offices of ARMIGER and SCUTIFER were formerly diſtinct from each other, with a manifeſt inferiority on the part of the SCUTIFER or *ſhield-bearer*; for, excluſive of what will appear hereafter in Chaucer's caſe, it is obſervable in Sandford's account of the coronation of King James II. (which was as full, accurate, and ſtudiouſly complete as poſſible in all its branches) that of the champion's two ESQUIRES, the ARMIGER (or he who bore the lance) had the poſt of honour and went on the right hand of the other (the SCUTIFER) who carried the ſhield.

THE KNIGHT had likewiſe in his ſuite certain PAGES to be occaſionally ready to do him ſervice, who alſo appear in the ceremonial of the CHAMPION as depicted by Sandford, and the *helmet* when not worn by the KNIGHT might very properly be born by one of them. I ſpeak of *Knights Bachelors*, and it is of them that Mr. Camden is ſpeaking; for BARONS and the higher orders of nobility had four ESQUIRES, as we have ſeen, and in ſuch caſe a third ESQUIRE might bear the *helmet*. But to proceed with the ESQUIRES in queſtion. Though many ESQUIRES

* See Ogleby's Coronation of king Charles II. and Sandford's Coronation of king James II. in both which we have drawings of this ceremonial. The heraldic account alſo ſays that of the *two* ESQUIRES attendant on the champion (who is generally ſuppoſed to be a knight), one was to bear the *lance* and the other the *ſhield*. [v. I. 7. in Off. Arm.] And further Mr. Du Freſne ſays, that thoſe who carried the *arms* and the *ſhield* (*arma* ac *ſcuta*) of *knights* were called ARMIGERI and SCUTIFERI. [v. Gloſſ. in voce *Valettus*.]

might

might ſerve under the ſame KNIGHT, in proportion to his poſſeſſions, yet *two* ſeem only to have been of his *body*, had the eſpecial care of his perſon, and were his companions in hours of privacy and retirement. Analogous to this, the ESQUIRES *of the* KING's BODY will be found to have been very confidential officers, and anciently near the *Royal Perſon* both by day and night.

I WAS led into this piece of *chivalry* by a paſſage in *Shakeſpeare* who makes *Sir John Falſtaff* PUN upon the word KNIGHT, "When thou art king," ſays Sir John to the prince of Wales, "let not us that are SQUIRES *of the* NIGHT's BODY be called "*thieves of the* DAY's *beauty* *." From this paſſage it is very clear that *Shakeſpeare* underſtood the ESQUIRES *of the* KING's BODY to be an appurtenance to his KNIGHTHOOD. Upon the ſame idea the ESQUIRES on *Inſtallations* of *Knights* of the *Bath* are preſerved in like manner as they were formerly uſed when the *Knighthood* and *Inveſtiture* were conferred *eodem inſtante*; Inſtallation being a modern ceremony introduced upon the revival of the order (1725) in imitation of the *Order* of the *Garter*.

THE *Knight* of the *Bath* is attended at this day by three Gentlemen who go promiſcuouſly, though erroneouſly, under the denomination of his ESQUIRES; but one of them ſhould be underſtood to be a PAGE, whoſe office was to ride before the *Eques Deſignatus* after his *bathing*, to the court for the purpoſe of his being *dubbed* and *inveſted*, bearing the *ſword*, pummel upwards, with the *ſpurs* hanging upon the *hilt*, while the *two* ESQUIRES rode on each ſide of the intended KNIGHT. Mr. Selden likewiſe allows but *two* ESQUIRES to a *Knight* of the *Bath*, and they were antiently called ESQUIRES *governors* who

* Hen. IV. Part I. act I. ſc. 2.

were

were to inſtruct the KNIGHT in matters of *chivalry* &c. *. This diſtinction is preſerved in the *ſtatutes* of the *order* as it now ſtands, and in ancient ceremonials (two of which are printed in Mr. *Anſtis's* Obſervations on the order of the *Bath*), the two ESQUIRES only are mentioned without taking any notice of the PAGE. Theſe ESQUIRES *Governors* were rewarded by the KNIGHT, (till within little more than a century) not by a ſpecific ſum of money, as others were who attended the ceremony, but by annuities during life preſerving thereby a relique of *eſcuage* †. To return to the ESQUIRES *of the* KING'S BODY. It appears from the houſhold of king Edward IV. (called the Liber Niger Domûs Regis Angliæ), that their denomination is relative; for there were at that time, both KNIGHTS and ESQUIRES of *houſhold*, as they are there called, which laſt conſiſted at leaſt of forty in number; and "out of "theſe, or otherwiſe choſen, were *four* to be of the BODY ‡." What number our kings might retain in very ancient times, or in the field, is uncertain; but, from this period they did not in domeſtic life ordinarily exceed *four*, *two* of whom waited quarterly (Temp. Edw. IV.) though afterwards one only was upon actual duty at a time, except in proceſſions, or on occaſions of parade. Since the reſtoration indeed *ſupernumeraries* have been appointed without duty or ſalary, with a reverſionary intereſt to ſucceed of courſe on vacancies, which was common

* See the ancient manner of making Knights of the Bath in the late Mr. Anſtis's Obſervations publiſhed 1725, extracted from the Cott. Library Nero c. ix. xi. fol. 168. [v. alſo Selden's Titles of Honour, ch. v. ſect. 47.]

† MS. in Off. Arm. *Knights-Service* was aboliſhed (and *Eſcuage* fell of courſe) by Statute anno 12 Car. II.

‡ We find however in a ſubſequent book of Ordinances in this reign that king Edward IV. had enlarged the number; for he had (A. D. 1478) *ten* KNIGHTS and *nine* ESQUIRES of his body, Bibl. Harl. N. 642.

in

in other branches of the houſhold. In a printed account of the coronation of king Edward VI. they are called *keepers of the king's perſon* *, which appellation may very well be juſtified by what will be offered preſently.

HAVING thus brought the office within the limits of the *houſhold*, I ſhall beg leave to proceed to the inveſtigation of the duty of the ESQUIRE *in waiting* (as the court term is) from the KING's riſing to his going to bed: after which time it will appear that the ESQUIRE *of the* BODY was the moſt confidential officer of all others that ſlept in the court. But I would firſt obſerve, that theſe officers, domeſtically ſpeaking, ſeem to have been entirely *regal*; for Henry prince of Wales, eldeſt ſon of King James the Firſt (large as his houſhold eſtabliſhment was) had no ESQUIRE *of his* BODY, although he was a Knight †.

THE ESQUIRES *of the* BODY then, Sir, were in the department of the Lord Chamberlain, their duty being, for the moſt part, in the rooms above ſtairs: they were Gentlemen of birth, or of good alliance, if not of fortune: and though ESQUIRE was the generical appellation, yet they were often *knights*, which laſt, when ſpoken of individually, were called KNIGHTS *of the* BODY.

IN ſome caſes *one* KNIGHT *of the* BODY ſeems to have been equivalent to *two* ESQUIRES; for it is ſaid in certain caſes, that there muſt be "*two* ESQUIRES or *one* KNIGHT." Conformably with this I find, that when the KING kept his *eſtate* in the *hall* upon a principal *feaſt* (Temp. Hen. VII.) there ſat with him a BISHOP and a DUKE, and for want of a DUKE *two* EARLS: and this commutation is confirmed by the ordinances of king Edward IV. (1478) above-cited, where in the article relating to the *counting-houſe* it is ſaid "*two* PAGES make anſwer to *one* "GROOM, *two* GROOMS to *one* YEOMAN, and *two* YEOMEN to

* Mexia's Treaſure of ancient and modern Learning.

† Bibl. Harl. N° 642, now printed in Dr. Birch's Life of Prince Henry.

"a GENTLEMAN *." It is to be obſerved that theſe were then the progreſſive ſtages of official rank; as they are, in many caſes, at this day. Apart from the enlargement of the number of Eſquires mentioned, (p. 11.) let us revert to the eſtabliſhment of the *four* which, we find, with ſome innovations had been the uſual complement. In the Liber Niger Domûs Regis Angliae (Temp. Edw. IV.) it is ſaid there ſhall be "ESQUIRES *for the* "KING's BODY *four*, noble of condition, whereof always "*two* be attendant on the king's perſon to array and unarray "him, watch day and night, and to dreſs him in his cloaths; "and they be callers † to the *lord chamberlain* if any thing "lack for his perſon or pleaſaunce. Their buſineſs is in many "ſecrets, ſome ſitting in the king's *chamber*, ſome in the *hall* "with perſons of like ſervice, which is called *knights ſervice*. "Taking every of them for his livery at night" [a certain quantity of bread, wine, and ale, and in winter certain allowances of candles, wood, &c.] "and wages in the *counting-houſe*, "if he be preſent in court, daily *ſeven pence halfpenny*, and "*cloathing* with the houſehold winter and ſummer, or elſe *forty* "*ſhillings*, beſides his other fee of the jewel houſe, or of the "treaſurer of England, and, beſides his *watching-cloathing* of "*chamber* of the king's wardrobe. He hath abiding in this "court but *two* ſervants [and] livery ſufficient for his horſes in "the country by the *herberger* ‡." Theſe ordinances do not limit the number of horſes; but the ſtatutes, made at Eltham anno 17 Hen. VIII. (1526), ſay that every *knight* belonging to the houſhold, whether of the *body* or not, ſhall be allowed ſtabling for ſix horſes, and every *eſquire of the body* five horſes. Anciently if an ESQUIRE of the BODY went abroad in the cha-

* See Bibl. Harl. N° 642. p. 92.

† Retainers.

‡ Sc. Harbinger.

racter of an ambaſſador, he had an eſcorte of horſe allowed by the king, ſuperior to other eſquires, viz. *ſix*,—when a common eſquire had, at the moſt, but *four*. A KNIGHT of the BODY had *ten*, and ſometimes *fifteen* horſes on like occaſions; when a mere knight (not of the body, or at leaſt not of the houſhold) had in the proportion of *eight* to *ten*, or of *ten* to *fifteen* *. The ſtatutes of Eltham likewiſe allow every ESQUIRE of the BODY to retain *four* ſervants, *two* of whom were allowed to eat in the hall.

THIS book of ordinances of king Edward IV. then preſcribes an outline of the offices to be performed by the ESQUIRE of the BODY upon duty; and orders, that "one of them "make [ready] the KING's cupboard [at night], and not depart "from it till the KING had *drunken for All-night*," which we may ſuppoſe was taking his leave in a grace-cup. The term ſeems to explain itſelf, but I ſhall preſently give a full account of the ceremony. Antecedent to this (according to theſe ordinances) one of the KNIGHTS of the BODY, together with a GENTLEMAN USHER, was to ſuperviſe the making of the KING's bed, and (according to the orders temp. Hen. VII.) to ſprinkle it with holy water, and at a proper time to ſet the KING's ſword at the *bed's head* †.

IN ſome ordinances for the government of the houſhold, made in the reign of king Henry VII. it is ſaid that the ESQUIRES for the BODY ſhall "array and unarray the KING, "and no man elſe was to ſet hand on him." But this, I apprehend, muſt at that period be confined within the limits of the *bedchamber*; for when the KING dreſſed in his *Privy Chamber*, the Eltham ſtatutes (made in the next reign) ſay expreſſly

* Hearne's Diſcourſes, Vol. I. p. 152. edit. 1773. in 2 vols. 8vo.

† Le Neve's Collections in the office of arms, WW.

(in the article relating to that apartment) the *king* is to be apparelled by the "GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER."

IN that room, againſt the time of the king's riſing, were appointed to attend him SIX *gentlemen of the privy chamber*, TWO *gentlemen uſhers*, FOUR *grooms*, the *page*, and the *barber*, which laſt was to come furniſhed with "water, cloths, baſon, knives, "combs, ſciſſars, &c. for trimming and dreſſing the KING's "head and beard." Both theſe circumſtances might however very well ſubſiſt at the ſame time; for the KING might be dreſſed but looſely in the *bed-chamber* by the ESQUIRE of his BODY, and proceed to the more finiſhed and ornamental part of his dreſs in the *privy chamber*.

AT dinner there was another office to be performed by the ESQUIRE; for the above-cited ordinances of king Henry VII. tell us that "one of the ESQUIRES of the BODY is to be "ready, and obedient at *dinner* and *ſupper*, to ſerve the King of "his *pottage* at ſuch time as he ſhall be commanded by the "*ſewer* and *gentleman uſher*." Whether the ESQUIRE ſerved the king of any thing more than merely the *pottage* at *dinner* and *ſupper*, does not appear: but in the afternoon (on certain feſtivals at leaſt) when there was a VOYDE * the ESQUIRE ſerved the KING with the *cup* when no greater eſtate was preſent.

* A *voyde* was a ſmall refection of *ſpices* (a term at that time including all ſorts of ſweets of the confectionary kind), and *rich wines* frequently taken by the KING and QUEEN after *even-ſong*, which on great feſtivals was attended with much ſtate. I have no better gueſs at the meaning of the word than that it is a transfer of the term from the *utenſil* to the *ceremony*, a *voyder* being a kind of *tray*, ſtill in uſe, under that denomination, for the purpoſe of moving glaſſes, &c. from one room to another. Time ſeems to have contracted the word a little, though its meaning has been enlarged ſo far as to imply the whole ceremony. "*After which there was a* VOYDE" occurs frequently in accounts of an-

THOUGH we have now left the KING in his *privy chamber*, and in the hands of the ſervants of that apartment, yet we muſt not entirely diſmiſs the ESQUIRE; for Sir H. Spelman ſays, that when the KING went out, the office of the ESQUIRE was to follow him and carry the cloak *.

THUS much for the office of the ESQUIRE of the BODY *by day*; but the principal, moſt eſſential, and moſt honorable part of his duty was *at night*: for when the KING retired to bed, the ESQUIRE had the concentrated power of the *gentlemen uſhers*, the *vice chamberlain*, and *lord chamberlain*, in himſelf, having the abſolute command of the houſe both above and below ſtairs. At this period (the reign of king Henry VIII.) and till the cloſe of the laſt century, the royal apartments, from the *bed chamber* to the *guard chamber* incluſively, were occupied in the night by one or more of the ſervants belonging to each chamber reſpectively. The principal officer, then called the GENTLE-

cient high feſtivals. But what moſt favours this derivation is a paſſage in Sir George Buck's Account of the Coronation of K. Richard III. "Laſtly," ſays he, "after dinner came the *lord mayor* of *London* and the *ſheriffs* with a VOYDER." [Life of K. Richard III.] The lord mayor of London is chief butler on a coronation, and ſerves the king with a cup of wine, and this formerly might be a branch of that office. The only veſtiges of a *voyde* remaining at preſent are preſerved in the ceremony of the MAUNDY, performed in his majeſty's chapel at White-Hall when after *evening prayers* (the buſineſs of the day being finiſhed) the *officers* belonging to the *Almonry* retire to the *Veſtry*, where they are ſerved, by the proper officers reſpectively, with *Roſe water* to waſh their hands, and for their refreſhment with *Rolls* of *Bread*, and *Sack*.

* Die, principem foris progredientem, ſubſequitur (ſc. Armiger ad corpus) pallium ejus ferens in caſulâ. [Spelman's Gloſſ. in voce *Armiger*.] The *eſquire* attended the *king* in progreſſes probably for this as well as other purpoſes. [See Leland's Collectanea, edit. ult. Vol. IV. p. 191.] This branch of the *eſquire's* office has now devolved upon the *Page* of *Honour*, who, at Reviews, carries the KING's *cloak*, or in more modern language his *ſurtout*, on horſeback placed before him in a port-manteau of blue velvet richly guarded with gold lace.

MAN (now the LORD) of the *bed chamber*, ſlept on a pallet-bed in the ſame room with the KING, and in the *ante-room*, between the *privy chamber* and the *bed chamber*, (in the reign of king Charles II. at leaſt) ſlept the GROOM of the *bed chamber* *. In the *privy chamber* next adjoining ſlept TWO of the *ſix* GENTLEMEN *of the* PRIVY CHAMBER in waiting, and in the *preſence chamber* the ESQUIRE *of the* BODY, on a pallet-bed, upon the haut pas, under the *cloth* of *eſtate*, while one of the PAGES of the *preſence chamber* ſlept in the ſame room, without the verge of the canopy, not far from the door. All theſe temporary beds were put up at night, and diſplaced in the morning, by the officers of a particular branch of the wardrobe called *the wardrobe of beds*. Beyond all theſe in the *guard room* was the *watch*, conſiſting of a certain number of the *yeomen* of the *guard*.

AFTER Supper, previous to the KING's retiring to his Bed Chamber, the proper Officers were to ſee all things furniſhed for the Night, ſome for the KING's *Bed Chamber*, and others for the KING's *Cup-board*, which was ſometimes in the Privy Chamber, and ſometimes in the Preſence Chamber, at the Royal Pleaſure, and furniſhed with Refections for the KING's Refreſhment if called for. After this the *Officers* of the *Day* retired, and committed all to the Charge of the ESQUIRE of the BODY. This Domeſtick Ceremony was called THE ORDER of ALL-NIGHT; the Nature of which I ſhall now give at large from an account preſerved in the LORD CHAMBERLAIN's OFFICE †. The Writer who was himſelf an ESQUIRE of the BODY to two ſucceſſive KINGS goes circumſtantially through the whole of

* Ordinances of King Charles II.

† Communicated to me by the late George Wilmot, Eſq. when firſt clerk in that office.

the ESQUIRE's Buſineſs *of the Night*; from whence it will appear that, even ſo lately as the middle of laſt Century, the Office was of ſo confidential a Nature, that no Diſpatch, Letter, or Meſſage, could be communicated to the KING *in the Night*, but what was brought to the ESQUIRE on Duty, and by him carried *in propriâ perſonâ* to the KING.

I HAVE taken the liberty to add ſuch notes as appear neceſſary for the information of thoſe who are unacquainted with the eſtabliſhment of the Royal Houſhold.

The

The ORDER of ALL-NIGHT,

As deſcribed by *FERDINANDO MARSHAM* Esquire of the Body To K. *CHARLES* I. and K. *CHARLES* II*.

"THE *ORDER* of All-Night for the King was
" anciently as followeth.

" The *Gentleman-Uſher, Daily Waiter* †, having the Charge
" of conſtant Attendance upon his Majeſty until 9 o'Clock at
" Night, called to the *Yeoman Uſher* ‡ attending at the *Guard*
" *Chamber Door* for *Ten Yeomen* to attend him to go for All-
" Night for the King. The *Gentleman Uſher* went bare-headed,
" and the *Yeoman* [*Uſher*] to the *Pantry* for *bread*—to the *But-*

* Mr. Marſham was a collateral Anceſtor of the Right Honourable Lord Romney, being the younger Brother of the firſt Sir John Marſham, Baronet, as appears by comparing Wood's Athenæ Oxonienſes with the Peerages. I find him an Eſquire of the Body to King Charles II. in a Preſent State of the Year 1674 [penes me]; and it appears by his own account that he had ſerved K. Charles I. in the ſame capacity.

† In the *Preſence Chamber*, which is ſituated next without the *Privy Chamber*, are *four* Gentlemen Uſhers, *Daily Waiters*, who at preſent officiate Monthly by turns. The Superior of theſe is the Gentleman Uſher of the *Black Rod*, whoſe attendance on the King is diſpenſed with on account of his Parliamentary Duty, he being the Gentleman Uſher appropriated to the Houſe of Peers. He is likewiſe Gentleman Uſher of the Moſt Noble Order of the Garter.

‡ Theſe, *eight* in Number, are now a Branch of the Yeomen of the Guard, and are the loweſt Order of Uſhers.

" *tery*

" *tery* [i. e. Butlery] for Two Flagons of *Beer* *—to the *Spicery*
" for *Sugar*, *Nutmegs*, &c.—to the *Wine-Cellar* for two great
" Flagons of *Wine* †—and drank the KING's Health in both
" Cellars, cauſing all to be uncovered going and back, having
" a *Groom of the Chamber* ‡ carrying a lighted Torch before the
" *Gentleman Uſher* until he returned into the *Preſence Chamber*,
" and lay all the *Services* upon the *Cup-board* there; and ſo de-
" livers all to the ESQUIRE of the BODY and takes his Leave.

" The ESQUIRE then takes the *Inner Keys* and Charge of
" ALL-NIGHT, calls to the *Yeoman Uſher* or *Clerk* of the *Cheque*
" for the Roll of the *Watch* and the *Page* of the *Preſence* §,
" with a *Silver Baſon*, with a *Wax Morter* ||, and *Sizes* **, at-
" tends the ESQUIRE into the *Privy Gallery* ††. Then he [the
" ESQUIRE] takes the *Baſon* ‡‡, &c. and carries it to the KING's

* A Flagon, according to Bp. Fleetwood, held Four Quarts, or a Gallon, [v. Chronicon Pretioſum.]

† By *great* Flagons of Wine perhaps is meant Ale-Meaſure. The Surplus of theſe Articles was then probably a Perquiſite to ſome inferior officer.

‡ Of theſe Officers there are *Ten*, who belong to the Great Chamber (long confounded with the Guard Chamber), and are properly the Houſhold Meſſengers under the Lord Chamberlain.

§ *Four* in number, who wait alternately in the Preſence Chamber.

|| Derived from the French word Mortier, which, among other things, ſignifies A Chamber Lamp [Cotgrave in Voce *Mortier*]. Mr. Menage thinks that the *Preſidents au Mortier* in France are ſo ſtyled from the ſhape of their Caps, which originally reſembled an Apothecary's Morter. [v. Menage, Dict. Etymologique, in voce *Mortier*.] An Etymological Writer, however, tells us, that the Term, as applied to their Caps is Celtic, and that the Word *Mortier* is a Compound of *Mor* (great) and *Tier* (Crown). [v. A Specimen of an Etymological Vocabulary, p. 44. London. 1768, 8vo.]

** Certain Allowances of Bread, Beer, Cheeſe, &c. are ſo called to this Day in the Univerſity of Cambridge.

†† The Court was then at White-Hall, where there was a Privy Gallery. See the following Diſſertation *prope finem.*

‡‡ The Uſe of the Baſon will be explained hereafter in Sir Francis Kynaſton's Note on a Paſſage in Chaucer, with a fuller Deſcription of the *Morter.*

Bed-

" *Bed-chamber*, and ſtays until his majeſty goes into his bed, " and then goes himſelf to bed, under the *State* in the *Preſence* " *Chamber*, in a *pallet-bed* *, ſent up from the *ward-robe*. At " eight o'clock in the morning there was the ESQUIRE's breakfaſt " uſually brought up to the *waiter's chamber*, where the *Gentle-* " *man Uſher* attended with a *Quarter Waiter* †, to relieve and " diſcharge him, and to take care of the *daily waiting*, and to " ſee the *preſence* and other *rooms* made ſweet and clean. The " breakfaſt was a good piece of boiled beef of fourteen pound " weight, with bread, beer, and wine; and ſometimes a boiled ca- " pon, and a piece of veal or mutton.

" THERE was a ſilk *traverſe* ‡ hung up, and drawn by the *page* " [of the preſence] and the *chair* turned, and the *page* lay on a " pallet-bed *without* the *traverſe*.

" AFTER

* Etymologiſts differ ſo much about the derivation of the word *Pallet*, that I muſt beg leave to refer you to *Junius*, *Skinner*, *Minſheu*, &c. We all know that it was a low bed, without curtains, very little raiſed above the floor, and which, for it's more eaſy removal, I apprehend, uſually went upon wheels: from whence, in very humble life, it was vulgarly called a *Trundle-bed*, as alſo a *Truckle-bed*, which in the day-time, for want of room, was concealed under a higher bed.

† There are *eight* gentlemen uſhers *quarterly-waiters*, ſubordinate in rank to the gentlemen uſhers *daily-waiters*, one of whom now waits monthly in the *preſence-chamber*.

‡ This term, in the preſent inſtance, merely implies a *curtain*; but it is frequently uſed, by a Synecdoche, to expreſs the whole *cloth* of *eſtate*, or *canopy*. The word ſeems to have been imported from Italy—*Traverſa*, in old Italian, ſignifying a *curtain*, meaning, I preſume, when applied to a window, as being drawn *croſs* it, which afterwards might be adopted to expreſs *curtains* in general. [v. Florio's Italian Dictionary in voce]. The *Royal Traverſes* ſeem to have been *fixed* in ſome apartments, and in others to have been *temporary*: thus anciently upon *marriages*, *chriſtenings*, &c. occaſional *traverſes* were put up in the *chapel royal*, and the little *canopy* or *pavilion*, now erected by the ſide of the altar, when the KING and

" AFTER the ESQUIRE of the BODY had carried the *morter*
" into the *bed-chamber*, and received the *word* of the KING, with
" his *treble* [triple] *key*, which the ESQUIRE in waiting always
" had, he locked the *outward doors* leading into the *privy lodg-*
" *ings*, and then went into the *guard-chamber*, and ſet the
" *watch* ||, and then returned to the *preſence-chamber*, where he
" lodged under the *canopy*, being the CHIEF OFFICER OF THAT
" NIGHT.

" IN all the time of my duty and ſervice upon my Royal Maſ-
" ter, his late *Majeſty* of bleſſed memory, I, being ESQUIRE of
" the BODY, did always come into the KING's *bed chamber*
" without aſking leave of any; and I did every night, having
" my ſword and cloak on, bring in the *morter* into his majeſty's
" *bed chamber*, and ſtayed there as long as I pleaſed, which was
" commonly till his *majeſty* went into bed; and, having received
" the *word* from his majeſty, I ſet the *guard*, and after ALL-
" NIGHT was ſerved up, *I had the ſole and abſolute command of*
" *the houſe above and below ſtairs*, as his majeſty did declare upon
" ſeveral occaſions to be the right of my place. And in the

QUEEN receive the *communion*, would antiently have been called a *traverſe*. The *ſtall* of the *Dean of the Chapel*, and thoſe of *Archbiſhops* and *Biſhops*, in their cathedrals, are *traverſes*. All theſe ſmaller *traverſes* have *curtains*, as anciently had the *cloth of eſtate*, not only of the *ſovereign*, but of *ſome* of the *nobility* at leaſt: for in a print of the *Howard Family*, engraved by Vertue, from a painting at *Norfolk-houſe*, the *curtains* of the *cloth of eſtate* are expreſſed. It is a private print, but is well known to the connoiſſeurs.

|| The *ſetting the watch* became afterwards the duty of the *Exempts* (or *Exons*) of the *Yeomen of the Guard*. Theſe gentlemen are *officers* of that *Corps* next below the *Enſign*, and are *four* in number, who wait by turns. The *Exempt* on duty ſleeps in the palace at preſent, being commander of the detachment of *yeomen* on duty for the night. As theſe officers were not added to the corps till the year 1668, we are brought nearly to the time when Mr. Marſham wrote this account, viz. between the Reſtoration and that year.

" time of war, upon all occaſions that required, I went into the " *bed chamber*, and awaked his *majeſty*, and delivered all letters " and meſſages to his *majeſty*: and many times, by his *majeſty's* " command, I returned anſwers to the letters, and delivered " orders. And I remember that, coming to the KING's *bed* " *chamber* door, which was bolted on the inſide, the late *earl* " of BRISTOL *, then being in waiting, and lying there, he " unbolted the door upon my knocking, and aſked me what " news?—I told him I had a letter for the KING. The Earl " then demanded the letter of me, which I told him I could " deliver to none but the KING himſelf: upon which the KING " ſaid—'*The Eſquire is in the right; for he ought not to deliver* " *any letter or meſſage to any but myſelf, he being at this time the* " CHIEF OFFICER OF MY HOUSE; *and if he had delivered the* " *letter to any other, I ſhould not have thought him fit for his* " *place.*'

" And before this time I never heard that any offered to hin- " der the ESQUIRE from coming to the KING, and I have fre- " quently brought letters and meſſages to the *bed-ſide* when the " *Duke* of RICHMOND was in waiting †. By me,

" FERDINANDO MARSHAM ‡."

THE truth of this account of the ESQUIRE's acceſs to the KING's perſon *in the night* is confirmed by orders for the government of the *Houſhold* [Temp. Car. II.] above cited, made (as ap-

* Of the name of *Digby*, created *Earl of Briſtol*, anno 20 Jac. I. which title became extinct 1698.

† *Lodovick Stuart* was created *Duke of Richmond* 1604. The title extinguiſhed 1672.

‡ We are probably indebted to Mr. *Marſham's* pique at the behaviour of the *Earl of Briſtol* for this inſight into the above little ceremonial.

pears from ſome circumſtances) about the year 1670, and ſigned by the King, where it is ſaid that,

"If any buſineſs of importance or diſturbance ſhall happen, "which is fit WE ſhould be acquainted with, he (the ESQUIRE) "ſhall come through our *Privy Chamber*, acquainting the GEN- "TLEMEN that lodge there that it is for OUR ſervice he paſſeth "that way, and ſhall come and give notice to a GROOM of our "BED-CHAMBER lodging in our *Drawing Room* *, who ſhall "acquaint the GENTLEMAN OF THE BED-CHAMBER *in waiting* "therewith, and then bring the ESQUIRE unto him, to deliver "his meſſage and buſineſs unto US." The Entrée of the *bed-chamber* was however ſoon afterwards taken from the ESQUIRES, notwithſtanding the above-cited ordinance, which is ſo ſtrong and explicit: for, by freſh orders of the year 1673, the ESQUIRE is directed,

"To wait in the *withdrawing-room* to receive the *watch-* "*word*; and that he preſume not to come into OUR *bed-cham-* "*ber* until WE are pleaſed to call for him: and when WE have "given him the *word* he is to depart immediately, unleſs WE "ſhall command him to ſtay longer †." The ESQUIRES however were reſtored to their priſtine honour in the ſucceeding reign; for the orders reſpecting the *bed-chamber* of the year 1685, ſay, "The ESQUIRE of OUR BODY attending ſhall come into "our BED CHAMBER *without leave* when he brings the *morter*, to "receive the *watch-word* from US, and may ſtay till WE go to "bed ‡." After ALL-NIGHT was ſerved, no one was permitted

* An ante-room to the *bed-chamber*, between that and the *privy-chamber*.

† This appears from a controverſy which aroſe (1683) between the *Lord Chamberlain* and the *Groom of the Stole*, touching the right of the former to the ENTRÉE of the *bed-chamber* without leave—the circumſtances of which I hope to give in a future memoir.

‡ Orders for the *Government of the Bed Chamber* of that year, *penes me*.

(according to the ſtatutes of Eltham) to come within the *preſence chamber*, except the TWO GENTLEMEN who ſlept in the PRIVY CHAMBER. This order ſeems to have been grounded upon that of king Edward IV. (A. D. 1478,) which ſays, that after the ſervice of ALL-NIGHT was performed, "no officer" [that is, who had *day-duty* only] "was to abide in his office, nor return to "his office again after his departure, without eſpecial com- "mandment of the KING or the QUEEN, or elſe by a ſpecial "token from the STEWARD of the *houſhold*, or from the KING'S "or QUEEN'S CHAMBERLAIN *." The following circumſtances regarding the etiquette of the *morning* are obſervable when the preſence chamber was to reſume it's ſtate, without any traces of its having been uſed as a bed-chamber. The Eltham ſtatutes ſay, "that the *page*" [of this chamber] "ſhall daily ariſe at "*ſeven of the clock*, or ſoon after, making the fires, and warn- "ing the ESQUIRES of the BODY ſemblably to ariſe ſoon after "that hour, ſo as they may be ready in the KING'S *chamber*, "dreſſed in all ſuch things as appertaineth, by *eight of the clock* "at fartheſt." And to ſhew how ſacred this room was held even when the king was not preſent, none but the officers belonging to it were ſuffered to enter, not even the ſervants of the ESQUIRES themſelves; for the order goes on and peremptorily

* See the ordinances of king Edward IV. in the Harleian Library, N° 642. It may not be amiſs to obſerve here that there were *two* books of houſhold ordinances which iſſued within a few years of each other in that reign. The date of the *firſt* does not appear, but it is aſcertained by Sir Robert Cotton, Bart. to have been of the year 1472, [v. Cottoni Poſthuma, p. 167,] The *ſecond* ſpeaks for itſelf, and was of the year 1478, and is called "*The New Book of the Houſhold of* "*King Edward* IV." They are both to be ſeen in Bibl. Harl. N° 642. ALL-NIGHT was then *ſerved* from *Candlemas* to *Michaelmas* by *day-light*, and from *Michaelmas* to *Candlemas* by *eight* o'clock at fartheſt. [Ordinances of the year 1478.]

enjoins,

enjoins, "that none of the *ſervants* of the ſaid ESQUIRES for the "BODY come within the *pallet*," [that is *preſence*] "*chamber*, "but be attendant at the door of the ſame, as well at *night* as "in the *morning*, with ſuch garments as their maſter ſhall "wear, and that the ſaid PAGE, at the requeſt and command-"ment of the ſaid ESQUIRES, fetch in and bear out their "night-gear, and all other their apparel, and in like wiſe "make them ready as well at *night* as in the *morning* accord-"ingly." Theſe orders then proceed to this effect, that leſt the preparation of the chamber for the king's reception ſhould be hindered by the negligence of the eſquires, they were, if tardy in riſing, to retire in their night-gowns to their private apartment, and there dreſs themſelves; and if the room is not evacuated in due time, the PAGE is ſtrictly commanded to repreſent the matter to the LORD CHAMBERLAIN without fear or affection at his peril.

THUS much, Sir, for the *domeſtick* functions of theſe ESQUIRES: we muſt now look for them in *proceſſions* and other *ſolemnities*. On the demiſe of king Edward IV. the corpſe was conveyed from the palace of Weſtminſter to the abbey, "born "by divers KNIGHTS and ESQUIRES that were of his BODY *." On the eve of the coronation of king Richard III. in the proceſſion from the Tower to Weſtminſter the *mantles* and *hats of eſtate* were "*worn* and *born* † by John Sapcote and William "Cateſby ESQUIRES of the BODY of our ſovereign LORD the "KING before his highneſs ‡." On this occaſion their allowance for apparel from the *wardrobe* was *nine yards and a half of crimſon velvet*. When king HENRY the SEVENTH'S QUEEN

* Archaeologia, vol. I. p. 348.

† See wardrobe account of the year 1483, printed in the Antiquarian Repertory. Vol. II. p. 247.

‡ The *hats* I conceive were *born* in their hands: but the *mantles* are ſaid to have been *worn bawderick-wiſe*, i. e. obliquely over the right ſhoulder in the manner of the antient ſword-belt.

proceeded

proceeded from the *Tower* to *Weſtminſter*, the day before the coronation, the canopy was born by four KNIGHTS of the BODY *. On the following day at the coronation it was ſupported, as uſual, by the barons of the cinque ports. Among others who accompanied the PRINCESS MARY, daughter of king HENRY VII. to France on her marriage with LOUIS XII. were *eight* ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY, with an extra allowance of thirteen ſhillings and four pence per day †. This was early in the reign of Henry VIII. who, though he had but *four* ESQUIRES *in ordinary*, yet he perhaps had *four extraordinary* who might be called to this duty *propter dignitatem*, or poſſibly *ſupernumeraries* might be appointed *pro illâ vice*.

IN the ſame reign at the chriſtening of prince EDWARD (afterwards king EDWARD VI.) the FONT was kept by *two* KNIGHTS and *four* ESQUIRES of the BODY ‡. At the coronation of king CHARLES II. in the proceſſion through the city on horſeback (ſays Ogleby), rode "in their places the Es-"QUIRES of the BODY *four* in number." At the coronation dinner we ſhall find *two* of them employed in a manner that ſhewed their official adheſion to the Royal Perſon: theſe we may ſuppoſe were the two ſeniors whoſe buſineſs is thus deſcribed by Ogleby. "Before the coronation dinner two Es-"QUIRES of the BODY took their ſeats upon two little foot-"ſtools on either ſide of the feet of the KING's chair (which "was placed oppoſite to the middle of the table,) and there ſat "till the KING came in to dinner, when riſing, and perform-"ing their duty in placing the KING's robes, for his better

* On account of the diſtance *twelve knights* were appointed for the purpoſe, *four* bearing it at a time, who relieved each other, by claſſes. [Addenda to Leland's Collectanea. Vol. IV. p. 221.]

† Idem. Vol. II. p. 702.

‡ M. 6. in Off. Arm. where the *knights* and *eſquires* are mentioned by name.

"conveniency

" conveniency of ſitting, they ſat down again at the KING's " feet ſome part of dinner time, until the KING gave them " leave to riſe *." I find them in a ſimilar poſition in the time of king RICHARD III. for in a MS. account of the coronation of that king and his queen ANNE it is ſaid, that, during dinner, " *two* ESQUIRES of the BODY were lying (or rather, as we " may ſuppoſe, ſitting in a recumbent poſture) under the " KING's board †." In a like ſituation I find two *ladies* at the coronation of ELIZABETH the queen of king HENRY VII. for grace being ſaid, " Dame *Katheryn Gray*, and maiſtriſs *Ditton*, " wente undre the table, wher the [they] ſett on ether ſide the " QUEEN's feetee al the dyner time ‡."

IN all proceſſions that I have ſeen, whether on *coronations*, to *parliament*, to *church*, or at *funerals*, theſe officers had a reſpectable place, and from their ſituations on ſuch occaſions and other authorities we may diſcern that they had a *ſpecific* rank. Sir Henry Spelman gives them the *pas* of all *eſquires by office* (ſuch as may be termed, if I am allowed the expreſſion, artificial eſquires), and even doubts whether they did not precede the *eldeſt ſons of* KNIGHTS: but of this laſt circumſtance, Sir Henry ſpeaks diffidently, and ſeems not to have given himſelf the trouble of enquiring minutely, as he might have done, the office and all its appendages being well known in his time §. Mr. Selden is ſilent on the ſubject of their precedence, as is Sir William Segar: Francis Markham, however, in his Decades of Honour, ſays, the firſt ſort of

* Ogleby's Coronation of King Charles II. p. 187.

† M. 7. in Off. Arm.

‡ Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, vol. IV. p. 226.

§ Theſe are his words, " Inter Armigeros qui fiunt, non naſcuntur, primarii " habentur *quatuor* illi *Armigeri ad corpus Regis:*" and then adds, " Quos et " equitum filiis primogenitis anteponendos aſſerunt." [Spelm. Gloſſ. in voce *Armiger*.]

eſquires,

esquires, are the ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY *. Mr. Camden likewise, speaking of *esquires*, says "the chief are they who "are chosen to attend the KING'S PERSON." These must be understood, to be the ESQUIRES in question; for those, who were antiently called *esquires of household*—were, at the time when Mr. Camden wrote, called *gentlemen* of the PRIVY CHAMBER. There can be little doubt then that these ESQUIRES were by their office the *premiers*, and had precedence of all esquires by *creation* and *office*, though not of all who had that denomination by *birth*. As these officers preceded all other *esquires*, so we may conclude analogically that KNIGHTS of the BODY had the precedence of other *knights*. This agrees very well with what Sir William Segar says †, "that the heralds at fu-"nerals are to marshall the mourners into their several classes, "as, *gentlemen*, *esquires*, *knights*, &c. ever preferring (caeteris "paribus) *her majesty's officers and servants*." In processions at the latter end of the sixteenth and the beginning of the seventeenth centuries, I find the place of the ESQUIRES of the BODY varying very much, and, from comparing them, one would incline to doubt whether *they* or even *knights-bachelors*, had precedence. Thus (anno 1588) in *Queen Elizabeth's* procession to St. Paul's the ESQUIRES of the BODY had place *above* KNIGHTS; in a procession to parliament in the same reign, I find them *below* KNIGHTS, and at the QUEEN's funeral they are again placed *above* KNIGHTS. In king James's reign they walked *above* KNIGHTS at the KING's entry ‡. In the procession to parliament (1603) I find them *above* KNIGHTS, and on the same occasion (1614) *below* them. From this fluctuation of rank little

* Decade II. Epistle 6. London 1626, small folio.

† Honour Military and Civil, p. 253.

‡ At the coronation of king James I. no *knights* walked.

can be collected: but as it is a glaring abſurdity to ſuppoſe an *eſquire* can, at any rate, precede a *knight*, the matter may be ſolved thus;—that in ſuch of theſe caſes where they went *above* KNIGHTS, they ſhould have been ſtyled KNIGHTS of the BODY; and when *below* them ESQUIRES of the BODY, diſtinguiſhing the *ſpecies* from the *genus*. But we can have recourſe to more antient authority from whence the ESQUIRE's rank may be diſcovered with preciſion; for, in the order of all eſtates ſet forth by Anthony earl Rivers in the 20th year of king Edward the Fourth, the parties are thus placed,

Knights Bachelors.
Eldeſt ſons of Bannerets.
Eldeſt ſons of Bachelor Knights.
ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY.
Younger ſons of Bannerets.
Younger ſons of Knights Bachelors *.

From hence it is clear that the ESQUIRES of the BODY had at that period a middle rank with reſpect to *eſquires by birth*, viz. *below* the *eldeſt* ſons of *bannerets* and *knights-bachelors*, and *above* their *younger* ſons.

THE *wife* of the ESQUIRE would likewiſe have a derivative rank, which is in ſome ſort aſcertained by the following authorities. In ſome ordinances of apparel which I find in the office of arms †, the *wife* of an ESQUIRE of the BODY might wear *five powderings* ‡ on her *bonnet*, when the *wife* of a *common eſquire* might wear but two: and again in "the ordinance of ap-"parel for all eſtates for the time of mourning made by MAR-

* Hare's MSS. in Off. Arm.

† Vincent's Precedents.

‡ Each black tuft upon the white fur ground, which we collectively call *ermine*, is termed a *powdering*.

" GARET COUNTESS of RICHMOND, (anno 18 Hen. VII. on " the death of PRINCE ARTHUR *) it is ſaid that the queen's " CHEYF GENTYLWOMAN, and SQURY'S WYFE for the BODYE, " *being in houſhold*, to wear in all things like LORD'S DAUGH- " TERS." At that time of day, and indeed till the cloſe of the laſt century, the mourning for the whole houſhold was provided at the king's charge by the officers of the great wardrobe; and antiently when the *wife* of the ESQUIRE was complimented with like mourning as a BARON'S daughter, I find the ESQUIRE himſelf had the ſame allowance as a KNIGHT, viz. *ſix* yards of cloth. A KNIGHT indeed had livery for *four* ſervants, and an ESQUIRE for *three* only; but at the ſame time other *eſquires* had but *five* yards of cloth for themſelves, and livery for only *two* ſervants†. Not long before this period the ESQUIRES had ſome pre-eminence *in point of dreſs* on ordinary occaſions; for in the ſtatute of apparel made in the 22d year of king Edw. IV. (chap. 1.) it is declared, " that none under the degree " of a *knight* ſhall wear any *damaſk* or *ſattin* in their *gowns*, " but only ESQUIRES of the BODY, upon pain to forfeit for " every default *forty ſhillings*." This was a greater privilege than it appears to be primâ facie; for the *yeomen* of the *crown*, who were the premiers of that degree at the time, had not only no ſimilar indulgence in this particular above the reſt of the *yeomanry* of England, but were prohibited *by name* from wearing any thing above their natural rank. There are likewiſe exceptions in favor both of theſe ESQUIRES and their WIVES in a former ſtatute of apparel, in the 3d year of this reign.

IT may be matter of ſurprize to thoſe who are partially acquainted with the royal houſhold, that the ſalary of an officer ſo

* In the Office of Arms.

† Bibl. Harl. N° 1107. fol. 54.

high in rank and confidence ſhould never have exceeded (even to the laſt) 50 marks or £ 33. 6. 8. per ann. This muſt be taken comparatively with other collateral officers, ſuch as *gentlemen uſhers*, &c. for at the acceſſion of king Henry VIII. the *gentlemen uſhers* of the *privy chamber*, and the *gentlemen uſhers daily waiters*, had but £ 20 per annum, when the ESQUIRES of the BODY had £ 33. 6. 8. which conſtituted a very material difference at that time of day. We have ſeen that the fee or ſalary of an ESQUIRE of every denomination was in the reign of king Edward IV. *ſeven pence halfpenny per diem*, that being an aliquot part of a pound. The ſalary of the ESQUIRES of the BODY however made a rapid advance, either at the latter end of the reign of king Edward IV. or early in the reign of king Richard III. in the very firſt year of whoſe reign I find a warrant to the receiver of the Duchy of Lancaſter, "to con-"tent and pay unto Bryan Talbot, fifty marks for his fee of "SQUIRE of the BODY for the year laſt *." Neither is this a ſingular caſe, for there are others to be found of equal date in

* Bibl. Harl. N° 433. where docquets of many ſuch warrants are to be ſeen. This antiently was the mode by which great part of the KING's *houſhold* was paid: for the KING then granted to his *ſervants* aſſignments upon the officers employed in the receipt of his revenue, ſuch as *ſheriffs* of *counties*, *collectors* of *cuſtoms*, *ſubſidies*, &c. Theſe *aſſignees* had *letters-patent*, *tallies* of the *Exchequer*, *writs* of *privy-ſeal*, *warrants*, &c. entitling them to their reſpective claims, and in default of payment they brought actions of debt in the court of Exchequer againſt the officer on whom their ſalary was charged. [See Madox's MSS. in the Britiſh Muſeum, N° 4486: and likewiſe his Hiſtory of the Exchequer.] This mode of payment is not entirely worn out; for the KING's *ſerjeant at arms*, appropriated to the *lord mayor of London*, receives his ſalary at this day from the *ſheriffs* of *London*, (who are conjunctively *the ſheriff* of *Middleſex*,) it being levied by the *ſerjeant's patent*, upon the KING's revenues ariſing from the *city* of *London* and the *county* of *Middleſex*. This appears from the words of the *lord Chamberlain's warrant*, directed to the *attorney* or *ſollicitor general*, to prepare the *ſerjeant's* patent for the *royal* ſignature.

the

the ſame MS. which ſhew that *fifty marks*, or £ 33. 6*s*. 8*d*. was then become the eſtabliſhed ſtipend, which continued to the laſt.

As to other emoluments accruing to the ESQUIRES, more than we have already ſeen, I obſerve none. There was indeed an apartment at Whitehall allotted to the ESQUIRE on duty *, which, as he ſlept in the *preſence chamber*, and was dieted collectively with other branches of the houſhold of ſimilar rank, operated merely as a *dreſſing-room*, and was but a negative advantage. Neither do I perceive any contingent perquiſites ariſing to the ESQUIRE, ſuch as *New-years gifts* †, or *fees* of *honour*, which laſt are *Droits of office*, granted to certain houſhold officers upon the making of *Knights*, the creation of *peers*, the homage of *biſhops*, &c.

THE ESQUIRES of Knights Bachelors had anciently a privilege which would hardly be denied to thoſe of the higher order belonging to the Sovereign; viz. a freedom from perſonal arreſt when in actual ſervice, of which Mr. Selden has left us a remarkable caſe, wherein it appears that *Sir Francis Tias* recovered £ 5. damages, in the reign of king Edward I. in the court of Wakefield, in Yorkſhire, againſt *German Mercer*, for arreſting the *horſe* of *William Lepton*, that was his ESQUIRE, and ſo making him to be unattended—[*quia fuit ſine armigero* ‡]. This exemption from perſonal arreſt extended to other branches of the houſhold, as will appear from the certificate of a *Gentleman of the Privy Chamber*, in the reign of king Charles II. given in the following Diſſertation.

* See the Ground-plan of WHITE-HALL, engraved by Vertue, from a drawing made 1680, and now republiſhed by your Society.

† New-years Gifts continued to be given both by the LORD STEWARD and the LORD CHAMBERLAIN till the reign of king James II. Liſts of both which I have ſeen.

‡ Tit. of Hon. p. 833. Edit. 1631.

THUS.

THUS much, Sir, I have ventured to offer, and I hope with tolerable grounds of authority, with regard to the *nature* and *duty* both *ancient* and *modern* of theſe officers. I ſhall now beg leave to add a word or two of their ſtill greater ſuppoſed antiquity, which will gradually lead to their extinction.

I dare not advance any thing tending to aſcertain the firſt appointment of the ESQUIRES of the BODY as *Houſhold Officers*: but from the nature of their *duty*, and as an appendage to KNIGHT-HOOD, one would imagine them to have been co-eval with KNIGHT-HOOD itſelf in its *military* ſenſe. Mr. Selden ſays he meets with the earlieſt mention of the title of *Armigeri* in *Ordericus Vitalis*; and the period alluded to is the reign of king William the Conqueror: but from what I am going to offer, this title appears evidently to have been in uſe, generally ſpeaking, much earlier, though we cannot ſay they were appropriated to the BODY; for there were from very early times Eſquires of the Houſhold [*Armigeri de Hoſpitio*] out of whom ſome might be more cloſely annexed to the KING's perſon, and be appointed to the BODY [*ad Corpus*]. KING ALFRED had his ESQUIRES, but whether they were of his *Houſhold* only, or of his *Body*, is not clear; yet one would incline to believe (from the complexion of the times) that they might be occaſionally and particularly in the field, *ſelectively* ſuch. Be this as it may, he pays great regard to them, both generally and ſpecifically by his will, whereby he gives to each of his ESQUIRES 100 marks. [cuilibet armigerorum meorum [ſc. *lego*] centum marcas, ſingulis eorum *proſe* centum marcas *.]

I likewiſe meet with Robert de Roelent an ESQUIRE to king EDWARD the CONFESSOR, by whom he was afterwards made a Knight †. James de Burton was an ESQUIRE of the BODY to

* Aſſerius Menevenſis de rebus geſtis Alfredi.

† Brady's Hiſt. of England, p. 219. in a note.

king

king Richard I *. There can be little doubt that CHAUCER was an ESQUIRE of the BODY to king Edward III. Sir Francis Kynaſton, who tranſlated the two firſt Books of Chaucer's Troilus and Creſſeide into Latin Verſe, labours to prove it in a note upon a paſſage where the poet has accidentally dropt the word *morter*, which Sir Francis interprets to be an alluſion to the *morter* made uſe of in the Royal *Bed Chamber*; and from thence draws his concluſion. Sir Francis, who had been a KNIGHT of the BODY to king Charles I. was naturally ſtruck with the paſſage, and in his note has gone further into the nature of the office of an ESQUIRE of the BODY than any *printed* account I ever ſaw; but his concluſion is rather weak; for the ceremony of ſerving ALL-NIGHT, and the uſe of the *morter*, muſt have been very well known to every interior branch of the officers of the houſhold. Weak as the proof is, Sir F. Kynaſton ſeems to have had truth on his ſide; for, I think, we are maſters of ſtronger evidence, which will leave no doubt, and will clear two points at once—*firſt*, that *Chaucer* was an ESQUIRE of the BODY, and *ſecondly*, that he poſſeſſed the offices of SCUTIFER and ARMIGER ſucceſſively. This laſt circumſtance will ſhew that the advance from the SCUTIFER to the ARMIGER was progreſſive, and confirm what has been ſuggeſted concerning theſe two poſts in the early part of this memoir. Theſe proofs are to be found in Urry's Life of *Chaucer*, who has preſerved a commiſſion of the 46th year of king Edward III. wherein *Chaucer* is ſtyled "SCUTIFER noſter;" and likewiſe a grant of the 48th year of the ſame king, wherein he is ſtyled "Dilectus ARMIGER noſter."

* Hiſt. of Leiceſterſhire, by William Burton, Eſq. (whoſe anceſtor he was), p. 177.

This

This was at a period when, I think, the words *Armiger* and *Scutifer* could not be conſidered as ſynonymous terms *.

THE ordinances of king Edward the Fourth, before cited, and which were founded on the model of king Edward III. ſpeak of the ESQUIRES of the BODY as old, eſtabliſhed officers of the *Royal Houſhold.* Weever has preſerved, out of Digſwell-church, in Hertfordſhire, a monumental inſcription, to the memory of John Perient, who was ESQUIRE of the BODY to king Richard II. king Henry IV. and king Henry V †.

WE have already ſeen them in the ſubſequent reigns of king Henry VI. king Edward IV. king Richard III. king Henry VII. king Henry VIII. and king Edward VI. but nothing has been hitherto ſaid of the reigns of queen MARY and queen ELIZA-

* Sir Francis Kynaſton's note, which Mr. Urry has given at large, is worth tranſcribing. The Lines in Chaucer which occaſioned it are,

" For by that *morter* whiche I ſe *brenne*
" Know I ful well that *day* is not far henne."

Troil. & Creſſ. Lib. IV. Line 1245.

" This word [ſc. Morter] doth plainly intimate our author *Jeffrey Chaucer* to " have been an ESQUIRE of the BODY *in ordinary* to the KING, whoſe office it is, " after he has charged and ſet the watch of the guard, to carry in the *morter*, and " ſet it by the KING's *bed-ſide*; for he takes from the cupboard a *ſilver baſon*, and " therein pours a little water, and then fets a *round take* of *virgin wax* in the " middle of the *baſon*, in the middle of which *cake* is a wick of bumbaſt [i. e. cot- " ton], which being lighted burns as a *match-light* all night at the KING's *bed-* " *ſide*. It has, as I conceive, the name of *morter*, from the likeneſs it has, when " near conſumed, to a morter wherein you bray *ſpices*; for the flame melt- " ing firſt the middle of the wax cake which is neareſt to it; the wax by " degrees, like the ſand in an hour-glaſs, runs evenly from all ſides to the " middle to ſupply the wick. This *royal ceremony* Chaucer wittily fancies to " be in Creſſeide's bed-chamber, calling this kind of match-light by the name " of *morter*, which very few courtiers beſides the ESQUIRES of the BODY (who " only are admitted after ALL-NIGHT is ſerved to come into the KING's *bed-* " *chamber*) do underſtand what is meant by it."

† Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 594. Edit. 1631.

BETH.

BETH. One would be led to ſuppoſe, that a *Queen Regent* had no officer of this nature; but I obſerve the ESQUIRES were continued in both reigns, though perhaps ſome part of their duty might be diſpenſed with. Queen Mary had three *; Queen Elizabeth four † ESQUIRES, at the old ſalary of *fifty marks*. Sir Thomas Bodley was appointed one of them to Queen Elizabeth, 1580, as we are informed by Antony Wood, and the writer of Sir Thomas's Life, in Latin, prefixed to the catalogue of the Bodleian Library, printed at Oxford, 1697 ‡. I mention theſe two authorities becauſe the compilers of the Biographia Britannica call him *Gentleman Uſher* ||.

IT may not ſeem ſtrange that a *Queen Regent* ſhould have officers of this ſort, though one rather wonders to find them in the retinue of a *Queen Conſort*; but I have ſeen in the account of the cofferer of PHILIPPA, the QUEEN of king Edward III. in his 25th year [preſerved in his Majeſty's State Paper Office] an order to pay to Sir William Fitz Warren, KNIGHT of the BODY to the QUEEN, 10 marks for his ſalary for one year. But this is not the only inſtance; for I obſerve, that in a book of ceremonies to be uſed on great feaſts, of the 9th of king Henry VII, in the article relating to Twelfth Day, an ESQUIRE of the BODY is mentioned as being appropriated to the QUEEN §.

* See a MS. containing all Q. Mary's officers, &c. in the Library of your Society.

† Peck's Deſiderata Curioſa, V. I. p. 39. Edit. 1779.

‡ This Life of Sir Thomas Bodley was tranſlated from the Engliſh into Latin by Dr. George Hakewill, who was his kinſman. Wood's Athenæ, Vol. II. col. 125.

|| Dr. Hakewill's word is *ſomatophylax*, which literally agrees with the writer above cited, who calls the ESQUIRE *keeper of the perſon*, v. antea, p. 12.

§ Bibl. Harl. N. 642.

We have likewiſe ſeen them in the reigns of king James I. king Charles I. and king Charles II. *four* in number *in ordinary*, when, by Mr. Marſham's account, they were in full employment and confidence. We are drawing to a period however when we muſt very ſoon take leave of them; for though there was a very great Retrenchment made by king Charles II. (1668) and many of the King's State Officers ſwept away, or contracted in their ſalaries, yet the Esquires of the Body were preſerved entire, both as to number and ſtipend: but as ſoon as the Ceremony of the Coronation of king James II. was performed (1685), the Esquires were reduced to two (in common with the Carvers, Sewers, and Cup-bearers) at which number they continued during the life of king William III. with whom the office expired.

I have the honour to be, Sir,

With great reſpect,

Your very obedient humble ſervant,

Samuel Pegge.

POSTSCRIPT.

THE Retrenchment of the year 1685, made ſo ſoon after the Coronation of king James II. has occaſioned an error in Sandford's Account of it. He mentions but *two* ESQUIRES in the *printed* Liſt of thoſe that walked in the proceſſion, but afterwards in the *Delineation* he gives *four*. The caſe, I apprehend, was thus: The drawings, of courſe, would be firſt made from the proceedings of the day, *ad vivum*, when *four* ESQUIRES actually walked; but, in the mean while, between that time and the adjuſtment of the *printed* account, the reduction was made. There was an interval of near two years before Mr. Sandford's work appeared, and he had probably heard of the reduction, and altered his *letter preſs* upon the occaſion, forgetting that he had given *four* ESQUIRES in the *plate*.

I muſt beg leave to add a ſecond *poſtſcript*, to ſuggeſt that the *two* * ESQUIRES of the BODY to KING WILLIAM III. walked at the Coronation of QUEEN ANNE, as ſervants of the *demiſed* KING, and moſt probably enjoyed their ſalaries for life, though they were not continued in office.

* The two laſt Officers of the BODY ſeem to have been Sir Thomas Grantham, Knt. and William Sydenham, Eſq. [See Chamberlayne's Preſ. State of the year 1694.]

CURIALIA:

OR,

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT, &c.

DISSERTATION II.

ON THE ORIGINAL NATURE, DUTY, &c.

of the

GENTLEMEN OF THE KING'S

most honourable

PRIVY CHAMBER*.

To the Preſident of the Society of Antiquaries, London.

SIR,

IN the courſe of the preceding diſſertation on the ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY, I could not but obſerve ſome collateral branches of the *Royal Houſhold*, which, as to their original nature, are enveloped in an almoſt equal obſcurity, although they are ſtill in being. There is indeed ſcarce an office in the

* Read at the Society of Antiquaries, May 11, 1780.

houſhold

houſhold at this day that carries with it much of it's primary uſe and intention, and ſome officers, from deſuetude, have little left but the name, and of theſe principally are the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER. From being antiently near and, I may almoſt ſay, companionable officers to the Royal Perſon, they are now become the moſt remote, and ſeldom viſible in their proper ſphere (and then ſcarce diſtinguiſhable as ſuch) above *thrice* in a reign. Two of theſe GENTLEMEN, choſen for their port, are nominated by the lord chamberlain, and *knighted* (if not knights *) to repreſent at *Coronations* the dukes of AQUITAINE and NORMANDY; an honour of the firſt magnitude, as it gives them for the moment (repreſentatively) precedence of the ARCHBISHOP of CANTERBURY. At the *Coronation* of KING WILLIAM and QUEEN MARY they took rank of GEORGE PRINCE of DENMARK, although he had married the QUEEN's *Siſter*. The *prince* walked only as a *duke*, being created *duke of Cumberland*, &c. April 6, 1689, a few days before the *Coronation*, with precedence of all dukes by act of parliament purpoſely to give him a place and a proper rank on that ſolemnity: but at the *Coronation* of QUEEN ANNE the PRINCE had rank *above* the repreſentatives of the dukes of *Aquitaine* and *Normandy* as the *Conſort* of the QUEEN, and had his train borne †. The dreſs of theſe two on ſuch occaſions is ſumptuous, bordering on royalty, their *mantles* being of *crimſon velvet*, lined with *minever*, and powdered with *ermine*: their caps of *cloth* of *gold* furred and powdered likewiſe with *ermine* ‡. The reſt of the GENTLEMEN

* *Knighthood* is an indiſpenſable qualification, for at the laſt coronation (1761) *Sir Thomas Robinſon*, who was appointed to one of theſe offices, was obliged to accept the honour of *knighthood* although he was a *baronet*.

† See the ceremonials of coronations in the College of Arms.

‡ Idem. There is a great overſight in Ogleby's Account of the Coronation of King Charles II. He gives us in the copper-plate of the proceſſion on horſeback what

MEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER have now a place in the proceſſion next below the Barons of the Exchequer, and above the King's Serjeants at Law. Anciently they had a ſtill higher place; for at the coronation of king Edward VI. the Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber followed the canopy immediately after the Aſſiſtant Train Bearer *.

THE *ſecond* occaſion when the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER appear in office is upon the *Entry* of *Ambaſſadors* from *Venice*, a ceremonial of great cavalcade. The ſtate of *Venice*, though it has always a *reſident* at our court, never ſends *Ambaſſadors* but *ſemel in regno*, and that only in token of compliment on an *Acceſſion*. The principal in this *Embaſſy* is always knighted (for which the cuſtomary fees are remitted) and beſides being preſented with a ſword of great value (ſuppoſed to be that with which he is knighted) he receives, as an augmentation to his arms, *ſome part of the armorial bearings of the* KING of GREAT BRITAIN, placed *in chief* upon his family coat, ſeveral grants of which made at different times are to be found in the Herald's Office †. The account of the *Entrée* of theſe *Ambaſſadors*, in the year 1763, may be ſeen at large in the Gazette of the 30th of April in that year; where it will appear, that *ſix* of theſe GENTLEMEN attended their EXCELLENCIES on every *official* occaſion, from their landing at the Tower, to their audience of leave.

THE ſame ceremony was formerly common to all ambaſſadors of equal rank, though it is now in other caſes diſcontinued and from Sir John Finett's Philoxenis it appears to have been in ge-

what he ſtyles *two perſons* repreſenting the DUKES of AQUITAINE and NORMANDY without any further diſcrimination: but in the printed account of it, and in the proceſſion on foot, he has omitted them.

* Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, vol. IV. p. 324.

† See the Earl Marſhal's Book, v. alſo Finett's Philoxenis, p. 113.

neral uſe in the reign of king James I. An ambaſſador from the emperor of Morocco to king Charles I. 1637. was attended to his audience by *twelve* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, "riding on brave horſes with foot-cloths;" a printed account of which Ceremonial may be ſeen in the Muſeum.

As this is the only ſolemn *entrée* now in uſe, I ſhall beg leave to inſert the account at large in the Appendix [N° I.] from the Gazette, whence it will be diſcerned how far the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER are employed in it; and I the rather do it, *as I truſt the repetition of it is at a great diſtance.*

THE laſt publick appearance of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER is on a very different and oppoſite occaſion, viz. on a *demiſe* of the KING or QUEEN, when, at the funeral, they bear the *canopy* over the *royal* CORPSE. This line of their duty may probably extend to the *heir apparent*, or *preſumptive heir*; and formerly it certainly went to remoter branches of the royal family; though at preſent the bearing the canopy over the younger and collateral relatives to the crown has fallen into different hands occaſionally *. The duty, however, of theſe GENTLEMEN till towards the cloſe of the laſt century went ſtill further; for they had not only the honour of ſupporting the *canopy*, but ſome of them had the office of carrying the BODY, in quality of *Under-bearers*. Thus it appears from the ceremonials in the office of arms, that on the following occaſions when *twelve* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER bore the CANOPY *eighteen*

* In the caſe of an *Heir Apparent*, or *preſumptive Heir*, I conceive the office would reſt with the GENTLEMEN of the KING'S PRIVY CHAMBER, where the party has not an *eſtabliſhment*. The late PRINCE of WALES [*Frederick*] having an houſhold, the *canopy* at his funeral was borne by eight of his own ſervants. N. B. He had no *Gentlemen* of his *Privy Chamber*.

more

more of them carried the *Body*, viz. At the Funeral of HENRY *Duke of* GLOUCESTER (the 4th Son of K. Ch. I.) 1660—of the PRINCESS *Dowager* of ORANGE 1660—and of the QUEEN *Dowager* of BOHEMIA 1661. The *Body* of K. CHARLES II. was intended to have been carried by theſe Gentlemen *, but the Coffin was too heavy, and required men of more robuſt habits, when the *Yeomen of the Guard* were called in, who have ever ſince performed that Office. This however was not the firſt time the *Yeomen* were employed in that Duty; for *twelve* of them carried the Body of their Inſtitutor K. HENRY THE SEVENTH to his Grave †.

AT the Funeral of his *late* Majeſty K. GEORGE the SECOND *ten* of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER bore the CANOPY, *one* at each of the Eight Staves, and *two* at each Head-Staff; and had every of them an allowance of black Cloth for Mourning, which iſſued from the Great Wardrobe by Warrant from the Lord Chamberlain ‡.

As no *ſalary* or *pecuniary emolument* whatſoever attends the poſt at preſent, it may be aſked why it is ſo much ſought after?—The anſwer is very eaſy, and almoſt *in omnium ore*—It is an exemption from ſerving the Office of *Sheriff*, &c. There iſſues at the commencement of every reign an inhibitory *Proclamation*,

* Funeral Ceremonials in the Office of Arms.

† Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, Vol. IV. p. 305.

‡ The ſupporters of the *Canopy* on the demiſe of *collateral* branches of the Royal Family, when *naval* or *military* honours are not paid to the deceaſed, are ſtill in part taken out of an inferior Line of the PRIVY CHAMBER: for at the funeral of PRINCE FREDERICK-WILLIAM, the *preſent* KING's BROTHER, and of the PRINCESS LOUISA-ANNE his *Majeſty's* SISTER, the Bearers of the *Canopy* were the *four* GROOMS of the PRIVY CHAMBER and the *four ſenior* GENTLEMEN USHERS QUARTERLY WAITERS. The *Canopy* over the body of EDWARD *late* DUKE *of* YORK was borne by VICE-ADMIRALS, and that over WILLIAM *late* DUKE *of* CUMBERLAND by GENERAL OFFICERS. [See Funeral Ceremonials in the office of Arms.]

to prevent the appointment of any of the *royal ſervants* to publick offices, which implies, among the reſt, the *Shrievalty* of a *County*; and the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER being ſworn ſervants of the KING (though without ſalary or conſtant Duty) are of courſe included in ſuch prohibition *. It has often happened, that a GENTLEMAN of the PRIVY CHAMBER has been returned to the Council, and been pricked (as the term is) for *Sheriff*; but, I believe, it has been as often ſuperſeded by a new appointment, and the party, by order of council, diſcharged. A particular caſe happened (anno 1761) with regard to *Sir William Hart, Knt.* who was elected *Sheriff* of LONDON againſt his conſent, and pleaded, as an exemption, that he was a GENTLEMAN of the PRIVY CHAMBER; but his caſe came neither within the letter nor the ſpirit of the proclamation: for though the *Sheriffs* of LONDON are conſolidated, *quatenus* MIDDLESEX, and act provincially as one man, yet being elective by the Livery of London, *Sir William Hart* could not come within the *royal* intention; nothing but a civil diſability could diſcharge him, and his Plea of courſe was over-ruled.

THE preſent appointment of a GENTLEMAN of the PRIVY CHAMBER runs in general terms, viz. "To have, hold, exer-"ciſe, and enjoy, the ſaid place, together with all rights, pro-"fits, privileges, and advantages thereunto belonging, in as full "and ample manner as any GENTLEMAN of his MAJESTY'S "MOST HONOURABLE PRIVY CHAMBER doth or hath held and "enjoyed, or of right ought to hold and enjoy the ſame." Theſe are the words as they ſtand at this day; but anciently the rights and privileges were deſcribed at large, and in an appointment anno 1662 (the 14th of King Charles the Second) are thus

* See the Appendix [No. II.]——*This is inſerted for the information of ſuch of the Royal Servants into whoſe hands theſe papers may fall, that they may be apprized of the Immunities incidental to their Offices.*

ſet

ſet forth. "His perſon is not to be arreſted or detained without "leave firſt had and obtained—neither is he to bear any *publick* "*Office*, nor to be impannelled on any *Inqueſt* or *Jury*—nor to "be warned to ſerve at *Aſſizes* or *Seſſions*, whereby he may "pretend excuſe to neglect his MAJESTY's ſervice." This points immediately at an exemption from the *Shrievalty* of a county, where the nomination is in the King—and the reaſon is given for the diſpenſation.

SUCH is the preſent ſtate of this Body of 48 Gentlemen of Rank and Fortune, who, it is natural to ſuppoſe, had, in their primary inſtitution, more official attendance, and *ſalaries* in common with the reſt of the ſervants upon the Royal Eſtabliſhment; for the purpoſe of diſcovering which circumſtances we muſt revert to times when the officers of the court were confined to the functions for which they were originally appointed.

THE moſt ancient mention of them that I have been able to find (though under a different denomination) is in the Liber Niger Domûs Regis Angliæ (Temp. Edw. IV.) which is ſufficiently explicit to ſhew the true intent of their inſtitution. They were called *Eſquires of Houſhold*, with *duty*, *ſalary*, &c. and their nature and office is thus deſcribed:

"SQUIRES of HOUSHOLD, FORTY or *more*, if it pleaſe the "King, by the advice of his high council to be choſen, men of "their poſſeſſion, worſhip, and wiſdom: alſo to be of ſundry *Shires*, "by whom it may be known the diſpoſition of the counties*. "And of theſe to be continually in this court *twenty* SQUIRES "attendant upon the KING's perſon, in riding, and going at all "times, and to help ſerve his table from the ſurveying board, "and from other places, as the *Aſſewar* † will aſſign; and

* From hence it appears, that theſe officers were from the beginning gentlemen of fortune, education, and weight, in their reſpective places of reſidence.

† That is, the *Sewer*, whoſe office is to place the diſhes on the table.

" when any of them be preſent in court he is allowed for daily " wages in the Cheque Roll *ſeven pence half-penny* * and *cloath-* " *ing* winter and ſummer, or elſe *forty ſhillings*. It hath ever " been in ſpecial charge to SQUIRES in this court to wear the " KING's *Livery* conſtantly, for the more glory and in worſhip " of this honourable houſhold: and every of them to have in " this court an honeſt ſervant, and ſufficient livery in the towns " or countries for their horſes, and other ſervants, by the *her-* " *berger*. *Two* GENTLEMEN [are] *lodged together*: they be " coupled *Bed-fellows* by the Gentlemen Uſhers. And if any of " theſe SQUIRES be ſent out of court by *Steward*, *Treaſurer*, " or *Comptroller*, or other of the *Counting-houſe*, for matter " touching the houſhold, then he hath daily allowed him *twelve* " *pence* by petition. They take no part of the *general gifts*, " neither with *chamber*, nor with *hall*; but if the giver give " them ſpecially a part, by expreſs name or words †. None " of

* This we have already ſeen was the pay of an *Eſquire* in the Houſhold. [v. the preceding Diſſertation, p. 13.] but we have not obſerved, that at this period the pay of the Houſhold Servants was not only calculated *by the day*; but was uniform, according to the rank of the party, without any diſcrimination of office. Thus when every ESQUIRE had *ſeven pence half-penny* per diem, every YEOMAN had *three pence*, and every GROOM *Forty Shillings* by the year, and every PAGE *twenty-ſix ſhillings* and *eight-pence* by the year. Theſe two laſt, if taken *per diem*, would run into very ſmall fractions, and therefore perhaps were generally conſidered in the groſs. By theſe means however the ſervants were eaſily chequed for negligence, or non-attendance in the two firſt inſtances: for after a reprimand for the *firſt* offence, the loſs of wages for a certain number of days was annexed to the *ſecond*; impriſonment and ſometimes corporal puniſhment to the *third*; and the *fourth* carried with it abſolute expulſion. [See the Ordinances of king Edward IV. of the year 1478.] The intermediate title of *Gentleman*, between the *Eſquire* and the *Yeoman*, was hardly then known in this official line.

† *General Giſts* at that period, I preſume, meant *New Year's Gifts*; which afterwards might extend to *fees*, and pecuniary *douceurs*, given upon *creations*, *homage*, *knighthood*, *&c.* now called *Fees* of *Honour*. As to the laſt of theſe, *Droits*, an intru-

ſion

"of these should depart from court but by licence of *Steward*, "*Treasurer*, or *Sovereigns* of the *Counting-house*, that know how "the KING is accompanied best: and to take a day when they "should come again, upon pain of loss of wages at his next "coming. These ESQUIRES of HOUSHOLD of old be accus-"tomed, winter and summer, in afternoons and in evenings, to "draw to Lords Chambers within court, there to keep honest "company after their cunning, in talking of *Chronicles* of "KINGS, and of other *Policies*, or in *piping*, or *harping*, *song-*"*ings*, or other acts *marviables*, to help to occupy the court, and "to accompany strangers till the time require departing *."

THE Rank of these ESQUIRES of HOUSHOLD, was, as to the younger sons of *Bannerets* and *Knights Bachelors*, collateral with that of the ESQUIRES of the BODY; but between themselves the superiority rested with the former, as appears from Coronations, where they both made a part in the procession. In the *privy-chamber*, however, the GENTLEMEN seem to have been rather subordinate even to the *Gentlemen Ushers*; for they were not only sworn to obey the *Gentlemen Ushers* in all things respecting the KING's service; but were called upon to take their places in case of absence. Thus the Orders of King Charles II. say, that "When "no *Gentleman Usher* shall be there to wait, the eldest" (or the senior) "GENTLEMAN of the PRIVY CHAMBER *in waiting* shall "officiate the place in all things till one of the *Gentlemen Ushers*

sion took place in the reign of KING PHILIP and QUEEN MARY; for I find that in the year 1554, upon the making of several *Knights*, the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER extorted a fee of 13*s.* 4*d.* "the which," says my authority, "was never had before." [Bibl. Harl. N. 6064. fol. 76.] As this was the *first* time that such Peculation was attempted, I must do the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER the justice to say that it seems to have been the *last*.

* KING Henry VI. had *twelve* KNIGHTS of his *Chamber*, *six* to be always residing in the court, and *eight* ESQUIRES of his *Chamber*, one of which was to perform the office of *Sewer* in the CHAMBER.

" ſhall come, both in going before Us in the Privy Lodgings and " carrying the candle in the abſence of our LORD and VICE " CHAMBERLAIN." This implies a *local* inferiority, and ſhews that theſe GENTLEMEN were then an intermediate official character between the *Gentlemen Uſhers* and the *Grooms* *.

KING Edward the Fourth had, beſides theſe ESQUIRES of *houſhold*, *Twelve* or more KNIGHTS of *houſhold* of the degree of KNIGHTS BACHELORS, *four* of whom attended at a time upon the KING's perſon, whoſe office was proviſional; viz. as the Liber Niger ſays—" to ſerve the KING of his *baſon*, " or ſuch other ſervice as they may do the KING in abſence of " the *Carvers*." This appears to be the ſubſtance of their duty; and they had *Bouche* of *Court*, and other allowances, with a fee of *ten marks* yearly. They ſeem to have been of a collateral nature with the ESQUIRES of HOUSHOLD, though not ſo much about the royal perſon, and, from their rank as *Knights*, muſt be accounted ſuperior officers, though their ſalary was not ſo great, *ten marks* being but £. 6 13*s.* 4*d.* whereas *ſeven pence half penny* per diem (which we have ſeen was the ESQUIRE's Pay,) amounts to £ 11. 8*s.* 1½*d* per Annum.

AT what period their title was changed from ESQUIRES of HOUSHOLD to that of GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER does not appear; but I conceive it to have been in the reign of KING HENRY the Seventh, or early in the reign of KING HENRY the Eighth; for they were called ESQUIRES of HOUSHOLD Temp. Ric. III. † and in the *Eltham Statutes* (1526) GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER.

* The GENTLEMEN were likewiſe ſworn " not to depart the diſtance of *twelve* " miles from the court without licenſe of the KING or of the *Gentlemen Uſhers*." Here I preſume the abſence of the Lord and Vice Chamberlain is implied. The form of this oath, as it was adminiſtered in the firſt year of Queen Elizabeth, is printed in the Antiquarian Repertory, Vol. II. p. 195.

† Bibl. Harl. N. 433. fol. 38.

FROM

FROM hence, Sir, we may diſcern, that theſe ESQUIRES of HOUSHOLD, afterwards called GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, were not merely oſtenſible characters; but had *conſtant* attendance upon the ROYAL PERSON in that *Chamber*, and were likewiſe employed in confidential offices without doors, as occaſion required. They had *Wages* and *Diet*, *Livery* from the *Wardrobe* (or money by way of compoſition for it) and *Herbigage* for their *Horſes* both in town and country. Thus is this now quieſcent body in motion, and will not become ſtationary, till towards the cloſe of the laſt century.

WHETHER the *Salaries* of theſe GENTLEMEN were firſt encreaſed about the reign of King Richard III. together with thoſe of the ESQUIRES of the BODY, I will not preſume to determine *: but I find their Number reduced to 18, and their *Salaries* enlarged to £50. per Annum each, at the making of the *Eltham Statutes* Temp. Hen. VIII. (1526) where they are ſtyled GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER. Stowe calls them, in his account of the marriage of Queen ANNE [Bulleyne], and in his deſcription of the Coronation of King Charles I. ESQUIRES of HONOUR, which is a very warrantable as well as reſpectable appellation; for we retain the name of *Page* of HONOUR, at this day, to diſtinguiſh ſuch *Pages* who attend the PERSON, from thoſe who belong to any *particular* branch of the *houſhold*.

THE *two youngeſt* of theſe GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER (for ſo we muſt henceforth call them) had indeed in the Reign of K. Henry VIII. but *Fifty marks* (or £33. 6*s*. 8*d*.): for which piece of œconomy no reaſon appears, unleſs they were *extraordinary* and added, for the purpoſe of completing the *rota* which conſiſted of SIX upon duty at a time. The intention of making the *Eltham Statutes* was a retrenchment, as well as a regulation.

* See the preceding Diſſertation, p. 32.

gulation. If we may be at liberty then to ſuppoſe that the number of theſe GENTLEMEN was found to be 48 at the acceſſion of King Henry VIII. (for the number we have ſeen was "40 or "more, if it pleaſed the King") and that the idea was to reduce them to a *third part*, the reſult will be *ſixteen*, which, not being diviſible by three, two *ſupernumeraries* might then be added to them to make a *rota* of SIX, who were glad to accept inferior *ſalaries*, with a reverſionary expectation. This at the ſame time may ſerve to account for the ſpecific ſum of £33. 6*s*. 8*d*. to the two youngeſt, it being the then ſalary of the ESQUIRES of the BODY.

SUCH as we find them in the Time of K. HEN. VIII. they continued to be (both as to *number* and *ſalary*) during the following reign. The Statutes of Eltham ſay, as to their duty, that *ſix* wait at a time, to be ready, at the KING's riſing, "to apparel "his *Highneſs*, putting on ſuch garments in reverend, diſcreet, "and ſober manner, as it ſhall be his Highneſs's pleaſure to wear." We have before obſerved in the preceding diſſertation that the KING ſeems to have been looſely attired in his *Bed-chamber* by the *Eſquire of the Body*, and afterwards to have in a great meaſure finiſhed his dreſſing in his *Privy Chamber*, as will appear clearly from the Statutes of Eltham which are very full and circumſtantial in theſe particulars, and ſay, "That the KING's "*Doublet*, *Hoſe*, *Shoes*, or any other *Garment*, which his pleaſure "ſhall be to wear from day to day (the *Gown* only excepted) ſhall "be honeſtly and cleanly brought by the *Yeoman* of the *Ward-*"*robe* of the *Robes* to the KING's *Privy Chamber door*, without "entering into the ſame, where one of the *Grooms* ſhall receive "the ſaid *Garments* and *Apparel* bringing and delivering the ſame "to one of the ſaid *ſix* GENTLEMEN to be miniſtered to the "KING's perſon as ſhall ſtand with his pleaſure." The exception of the *Gown* naturally creates a queſtion not eaſily ſolvable; but

but I conjecture that it was either reſerved to be put on in the *Bed-chamber* by the GROOM of the STOLE, or if it was put on at all in the *Privy-chamber*, that it was done by ſome perſon of higher degree who was preſent, or called upon for the purpoſe, as it was the cuſtom of the times for the KING to be ſerved in many inſtances, according to the language of that age, by the *greateſt eſtate** preſent at the time. It is further ordained by theſe ſtatutes, "that *two* of the ſaid *ſix* GENTLEMEN ſhall "nightly lie on the pallet within the KING's ſaid *Privy Cham-* "*ber* †. That the ſaid *ſix* Gentlemen ſhall have a vigilant and "a reverend reſpect and eye to his MAJESTY, ſo that by his "look or countenance they may know what he lacketh, or is "his pleaſure to be had or done:" and further, "That divers "of them be well languaged, expert in outward parts, and "meet, and able to be ſent on familiar meſſages, or otherwiſe, "to outward princes when the cauſe ſhall require."

SOME of theſe GENTLEMEN for ſeveral ages attended the King when he took a journey or went on a progreſs. Thus, though K. Henry VIII. went *incog.* to Rocheſter to viſit the Princeſs ANNE of CLEVES the day before her publick reception, he took with him *eight* of theſe GENTLEMEN, and the whole body attended at the interview on horſeback; and again, when K. CHARLES I. went to receive MARY DE MEDICIS, the mother of his Queen HENRIETTA, at *Mulſham Hall*, in *Eſſex*, the

* It was anciently a general rule that the KING was to be ſerved in all things by the *greateſt eſtate* (or perſon) preſent at the time, notwithſtanding there were officers appropriated to each ſeveral duty; and that ſuch their duty in a manner devolved upon the officer for want of perſons of greater rank. This idea is not quite vaniſhed, for when the King dines at an inſtallation of KNIGHTS of the order of the GARTER, his MAJESTY is ſerved by *Noblemen* in quality of *Carver*, *Cup-bearer*, and *Sewer*, and not by *Gentlemen* who are officially ſuch.

† See before, where two of the ESQUIRES of HOUSHOLD are ſaid to have been "*coupled Bed-fellows by the Gentleman Uſher.*"

ſeat of *Sir — Mildmay*, he was attended by ſeveral GENTLEMEN of his PRIVY CHAMBER *.

THE dignity of the office of theſe GENTLEMEN, when ſent in the KING's name, was unhappily exemplified in the caſe of *Cardinal* WOLSEY, who was himſelf the fabricator of theſe very ſtatutes. The well-known ſtory of his ſurrender to one of them is briefly this: The KING's commiſſion was granted to the *Earl* of *Northumberland*, to arreſt the *Cardinal* for High Treaſon; to which the *Cardinal* refuſed to ſubmit himſelf, without ſeeing the KING's *Commiſſion*, which the *Earl* declined ſhewing, as it contained ſome inſtructions not proper to be ſeen by the intended priſoner: but when *Sir Walter Walſh* entered the apartment, the *Cardinal* ſurrendered himſelf to him, ſaying, "You are a ſufficient Commiſſioner in this behalf, "being *One of the Privy Chamber* †."

To return, Sir, to the domeſtic offices of theſe GENTLEMEN. The KING, no doubt, often converſed freely with them; for they are cautioned in the ſtatutes of Eltham not to avail themſelves of that condeſcenſion, by "making ſuits to his *Grace*, "or intermedling in cauſes and matters, otherwiſe than they "ſhall be commanded; that it might appear to the King's

* See the account of this Queen's Entrée by Mr. La Serre, printed at London, 1639, and re-printed 1775. p. 22. Mr. Puget de la Serre was Hiſtoriographer to the Queen Mother of France. [v. Le vray Eſtat de la France, printed at Paris 1652. p. 96.]

† Cavendiſh's Life of Cardinal *Wolſey*. This was the language of the times, for *Sir Robert Carey*, afterwards *Earl* of *Monmouth*, ſpeaking of Mr. William Killegrew (who was one of theſe GENTLEMEN in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, calls him, "*One of the Privy Chamber*." [Memoirs, p. 102.] *Lord Herbert* plainly underſtood this mode of ſpeaking; for he expreſſly makes the *Cardinal* call *Sir Walter Walſh* "GENTLEMAN *of the* PRIVY CHAMBER." [Life of K. Hen. VIII. p. 340.]

"honour,

"honour, that he had choſen ſuch well qualified, mannered, "and elect perſons to be attendant on his Royal Perſon."

AT this period, when the attendance was ſo cloſe, and the confinement ſo great, the *ſix* GENTLEMEN of the *Privy Chamber*, on duty, were dieted in the *Privy Chamber*, after the KING had withdrawn to his ſtill more retired apartment, and were ſerved, together with the *two* GENTLEMEN USHERS in waiting, with "*two Meſſes of Meat**, well and ſubſtantially fur-"niſhed, to be dreſſed by the cooks of the *Privy* Kitchin," that is, the KING's own kitchin; and the reaſon is given in the ſtatutes why theſe Officers did not eat in common with the reſt of the Houſhold, "for as much," ſay they, "as it is not con-"venient that any time certain ſhall be prefixed for the KING's "going to dinner or ſupper." Theſe GENTLEMEN, from the reign of King Edward IV. (at leaſt) till after the Reſtoration, ſerved the KING's board with meat, and were to do other ſervices occaſionally, as appears from Liber Niger—the Eltham Statutes—and the Houſhold Ordinances of King Charles I. and King Charles II.

So rigid was the confinement of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER in their *tours* of Duty in the reign of KING Henry VIII. that they had very little relaxation from buſineſs, and none from attendance. All the indulgence permitted them was, that at ſuch time as the KING avoided the room, they were allowed, by the ſtatutes, to play at *Dice*, *Cards*, *Cheſs*, and *Tables* in the PRIVY CHAMBER, during the KING's abſence,

* By a *Meſs* of *Meat* (though with ſome exceptions in later times, as appears by ordinances of K. James I.) is generally meant *four* perſons: ſo that in this caſe the *ſix* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, and the *two* GENTLEMEN USHERS would form *two Meſſes*. In ſome œconomical arrangements of K. James I. they ran *ſix* to a *Meſs*, in certain caſes: [v. Bibl. Harl. No. 642.] though *four* was the ſtandard, and thus the *Meſſes* remain in our Inns of Court at this day.

with a caution againſt the intemperate uſe of them, and with an injunction to deſiſt as ſoon as they had knowledge of the KING's approach, that they might be "reverently attendant on "on him at his entry, as to the office of good, reverend, and "humble ſervants doth appertain."

BEFORE I quit this reign, I would obſerve that ſix of theſe GENTLEMEN bore the *Canopy* at the *Chriſtening* of KING EDWARD VI. but to prevent miſconception, I would likewiſe obſerve that this does not appear to have been a right of office; for at the *Chriſtening* of PRINCE ARTHUR (the eldeſt ſon of King Henry VII.) the *Canopy* was borne by indifferent perſons who had no claim by office: and at the *Chriſtening* of the PRINCESS MARY his daughter, it was born by *four Bannerets* *.

DURING the ſhort reign of K. Edw. VI. one may ſuppoſe the houſhold, which was left ſo well regulated by K. Hen. VIII. did not receive any material alteration: but upon the acceſſion of Q. Mary it is natural to imagine the face of things would change in the interior apartments, and that a QUEEN REGENT ſhould adopt *Ladies* in lieu of *Gentlemen* in her chamber of retirement.

AGREEABLE to this, we find that Her Majeſty's board (which was always in the *Privy Chamber*) was ſerved by LADIES and GENTLEWOMEN: the *Cup* was given by one GENTLEWOMAN, and another had the charge of the *Cupboard*: the offices of *Carvers* and *Uſhers* indeed were performed by GENTLEMEN; all which appears from a MS. account left by Mr. Norris, one of her Majeſty's Gentlemen Uſhers †. Notwithſtanding this revolution in the arrangement of the PRIVY CHAMBER, the GENTLEMEN in queſtion were ſo far from being diſcharged, that they were preſerved entire both in *number* and *ſalary*, there being (by

* Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, vol. IV. p. 254.

† Of which I have a tranſcript.

Mr. Norris's account) always one at leaſt of that body *in waiting*, who was either to attend the CHAMBER, or "to leave "word with the *Gentleman Uſher* where he ſhall *have him*, "if the Queen at any time ſhall call for one of them to ſend "any where, or any elſe her Highneſs's pleaſure." The office was at this time in ſuch high eſtimation, that, in the firſt year of the Queen, we find, among the eighteen GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, John [Dudley] duke of Northumberland, lord Robert [Dudley] his ſon, afterwards earl of Leiceſter, and William [Herbert] earl of Pembroke; and all the reſt, excepting two, were knights *. As to the LADIES of the PRIVY CHAMBER, I ſhall have occaſion to mention them again hereafter; but before I quit this period, I would obſerve that the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, in common with the *Gentlemen Uſhers* of the ſame room, were allowed by K. Hen. VIII. annually *ten* yards of *velvet* each for a *Cloak*; and at the coronation of K. Edw. VI. they had (as had the *Gentlemen Uſhers*) certain yards (the quantity is left indefinite) of crimſon *velvet* for *Gowns*, and certain yards of tinſhey (tiſſue) to line them †. This, I preſume, was not the firſt, nor the laſt time of their having ſuch allowances from the wardrobe, though I have as yet found no further traces of it.

IT is no wonder that we do not meet with LADIES of the PRIVY CHAMBER antecedent to this period; for it muſt be conſidered, that QUEEN MARY was the firſt Queen REGENT that ſat upon the throne. Her houſhold was not only the ſame

* See a liſt of Queen MARY's *houſhold* (as it is called) in the library of your Society: though perhaps it might more properly be termed the HOUSHOLD *as it ſtood on the Queen's Acceſſion*; becauſe the *Duke* of *Northumberland* was executed within little more than a month after her *Majeſty* was proclaimed QUEEN.

† This appears from a MS. account of part of the duty of a Gentleman Uſher, left by Sir Richard Blount, who was in that office in the reign of K. Edw. VI.

in

in every reſpect with that of a KING, but more enlarged in this particular branch, becauſe ſhe preſerved the GENTLEMEN, at the ſame time that ſhe adopted the LADIES, of the PRIVY CHAMBER.

THIS department will be found in the ſame ſtate as to its officers, both *male* and *female*, during the reign of QUEEN ELIZABETH as it had been eſtabliſhed by her ſiſter QUEEN MARY, which appears from a liſt of her houſhold, preſerved in the Harleian Library, made about the year 1593, now printed in *Peck's* Deſiderata Curioſa *.

IT may not be amiſs to obſerve here, that the LADIES of the PRIVY CHAMBER were continued in after-reigns even by QUEEN's CONSORT, for I meet with them on the Queen's Side in the reign of KING JAMES †, K. Cha. I. ‡, and K. Cha. II. §; and further, QUEEN HENRIETTA, on her return to England, after the Reſtoration, retained *four* LADIES of her PRIVY CHAMBER with ſalaries of 150 £. per annum each ‖. In this laſt reign (of K. Cha. II.) I am aſhamed to confeſs, that I find Mrs. Eleanor Gwynne (better known by the name of *Nell Gwynne*) among the LADIES of the PRIVY CHAMBER to Queen Catherine **. This was bare-faced enough to be ſure! Had the King made a momentary connection with a lady of that denomination, the offence might have been connived at by the Queen, but the placing one of the meaneſt of his creatures ſo near the Queen's perſon, was an inſult that nothing could palliate but the licenciouſneſs of the age, and the abandoned character of that laſcivious monarch!

* Vol. I. p. 59. Edit. 1779.

† Finett's Philoxenis.

‡ Houſhold Ordinances.

§ Houſhold Ordinances.

‖ Memoirs of her Life, printed at London, 1671.

** She was ſworn into that poſt 1675, as appears from the books in the Lord Chamberlain's Office.

THE

THE reign of KING JAMES THE FIRST ſeems to have proved fatal to the *Salaries* of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, and to have left them nothing but the *Honour*, except *diet* when in waiting. The king had enlarged the number from *eighteen* to *forty-eight*, and the houſhold account of the year 1615 * ſays expreſſly, that they had *no Fee* or *Allowance* from the KING. This revolution in diſfavor of theſe officers may I think very properly be attributed to this period, as there was a great retrenchment in the ſecond year of this king; it is however very clear that they had *Salaries* in the reign of QUEEN ELIZABETH, and *none* after the reign of KING JAMES. Of this indeed I have no poſitive evidence, though there ſeems to have been ample occaſion for ſuch a ſtep, when we are told by writers of unſuſpected authority, that the neceſſities, to which his majeſty was reduced, were ſo great, that in the year 1606-7 (the fourth year of his reign) the officers of the *houſhold* were ſo importunate and clamorous, that they ſtopped the *Lord High Treaſurer* (the *Earl* of *Dorſet*) in the ſtreet, and would not ſuffer his coach to proceed, till he had made them a promiſe of payment †. The Prince of Wales (Prince *Henry*) was in the ſame predicament; the *purveyors*, for want of payment, actually refuſing to furniſh his highneſs any longer with proviſions, which occaſioned his writing in harſh terms to the *Earl* of *Dorſet* ‡.

THIS PRINCE had the largeſt houſhold that perhaps ever was eſtabliſhed for a PRINCE OF WALES, and amongſt the reſt of his officers had GENTLEMEN of his PRIVY CHAMBER, both *ordinary* and *extraordinary*, amounting in the groſs to full an

* In the College of Arms.
† Dr. Birch's Life of Prince Henry, 8vo. p. 83.
‡ Idem.

equal

equal number with thoſe of the KING; but *they* likewiſe do not appear to have had any *Salary*. From theſe circumſtances, taken together, I am induced to conclude, as has been obſerved, that the *ſalaries* were taken off early in the reign of *King* JAMES —from which time the office will appear to have been a poſt of *Honour* only.

NOTWITHSTANDING this defalcation in point of emolument, the *Duty* of theſe GENTLEMEN was equal to what it had been in every reſpect, and their attendance ſtrongly enforced by ordinances of houſhold of the reigns of king Charles I. and Charles II. which are ſtill to be ſeen in the Lord Chamberlain's office.

IN this ſituation they could only be *expectants*, like the chaplains, and look for places of profit in *reverſion*; and indeed lucrative employments in the revenue departments, in embaſſies, &c. they ſeem to have had a right to fill, after they had perhaps played a loſing game by cloſe and expenſive attendance for ſeveral years, accompanied with nothing but mere *Honour*, and *negative* privileges.

WE muſt now, Sir, proceed with our GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER at a period when they might be more properly ſtyled, as Stowe calls them at this time, *Eſquires of Honour*, having little more to boaſt of *. Their number both in the reign of King Charles Iſt and King Charles IId was 48. which ſeems to have been uniformly the eſtabliſhed complement from the time of King James, to this day; for as they had nothing but diet of the KING, they were not diminiſhed in number by retrenchments, which happened afterwards. During theſe reigns they were called to ſuch rigid attendance, as if their poſts had been more lucrative than ever. "The "GENTLEMEN of our PRIVY CHAMBER being 48," ſay the

* King Charles I. created five of them Knights of the Bath on his coronation. [See Anſtis's Obſervations on the Order of the Bath, p. 78.]

Ordinances

Ordinances of Houſhold of both Reigns *, "ſhall be divided to "wait by their quarters, *twelve* in each quarter, and ſuch of "them as ſhall not accordingly wait in their quarters, ſhall loſe "their places, and others [be] ſworn in their places by our Lord "Chamberlain." Theſe Ordinances then preſcribe their Duty; *viz.* "That they attend diligently in our PRIVY CHAMBER, "and expect notice of the *Gentleman Uſher* in waiting when we "are going abroad, and then to paſs through the *Privy Galleries*, "and attend us *going out* and *coming in*." Here the line of their *Eſcorte* ſeems to have been drawn, though the attendance of the *Gentlemen Uſhers* of the PRIVY CHAMBER went ſomething farther, as will appear hereafter. The interior office of theſe GENTLEMEN within the *Privy Chamber* continued to be the ſame as it originally had been in part; *viz.* the bringing in the KING's meat to the board (when he dined there) and to do other ſervices †. *Two* of the *twelve in waiting* were enjoined to lodge every night in the PRIVY CHAMBER; and the names of the *two*, whoſe tour of duty it was to ſleep there, were delivered at the beginning of every week to the LORD CHAMBERLAIN, or VICE CHAMBERLAIN, by the *Gentleman Uſher*. During this reign they were employed in *outward* as well as *domeſtick* ſervices, for when *Mary de Medicis* the Q. Dowager of K. Hen. IV. of France, and mother of QUEEN HENRIETTA Conſort of K. Charles I. came to viſit her daughter, (1639,) the King ſent, among others, *ſeveral* GENTLEMEN of his PRIVY CHAMBER to receive her on her landing, who were to aſſiſt in conducting her to the Interview ‡. This unfortunate King was not bereft of theſe officers even in his impriſonment at *Holdenby-houſe* in Northamptonſhire, though the greateſt part

* In the Lord Chamberlain's Office.

† Houſhold Ordinances of theſe Reigns.

‡ L' Entrée of Mary de Medicis, by Mr. la Serre.

of his ordinary ſervants were denied him, *ſix* of the GENTLEMEN of his PRIVY CHAMBER being permitted to attend him, who were to officiate in various capacities, ſupplying (beſides their own duty) the places of *Carver*, *Sewer*, *Cup-bearer*, and *Eſquire of the Body*, by turns *.

THE following reign differed little from the laſt, with regard to the parties in queſtion. The Houſhold of K. Charles II. had certainly been conſiderably enlarged at his acceſſion; for in the year 1667, a retrenchment took place, whereby all ſupernumerary officers and charges, other than ſuch as were in eſſe in the reign of K. Charles I. were taken away †.

THIS enlargement of the houſhold eſtabliſhment did not, however, reſtore the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER to their *Salaries*; for in a parchment roll of the KING's ſervants, made 1660 ‡, it is ſaid, in marginal notes (which run through the whole) that they had *anciently* 50l. per annum, but *then* only *diet* when *in waiting*.

IT has been ſaid, that in the reign of King Hen. VIII. theſe GENTLEMEN dined (together with the *Gentlemen Uſhers*) in the PRIVY CHAMBER, after the King had avoided it, and had withdrawn to his interior apartments; but that was not the caſe at this period, and it ſeems to have been a diſcontinuance of ſome ſtanding; for I find that the officers of the *Privy Chamber*, of every denomination, dined, together with ſeveral other officers, at a table called the *Waiters Table*, which was regulated by the ordinances of theſe two laſt reigns, wherein it is called a *Ratification of ancient Orders*. This mode was, I think, moſt probably adopted on the acceſſion of QUEEN MARY, when ſhe intro-

* Peck's Deſiderata Curioſa, Vol. II. p. 372. Edit. 1779.

† Lord Chamberlain's Office-books.

‡ In the Lord Chamberlain's Office.

duced

duced LADIES of her PRIVY CHAMBER. It is to be obſerved here, that *eight* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER only were permitted to dine at this *Table*, though *twelve* were enjoined to be every day *in waiting*, which I conceive muſt have been the effect of the retrenchment we have mentioned 1667; for theſe orders of houſhold were evidently made after the year 1668, as they include officers, whoſe places were not erected till that year. The Ordinances of K. Charles II. were only an enlarged edition of thoſe of his father K. Charles I.; and though it was *auctior*, yet I cannot ſay it was *emendatior* with regard to the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER: but the deciſive blow, which reduced theſe GENTLEMEN to their preſent poſt of HONOUR only, was moſt probably the very great reduction in almoſt every branch of the royal houſhold, which took place in the reign of K. James II. immediately after the demiſe of K. Charles II. There was ſcarce an office (collectively ſpeaking) however humble, that did not ſuffer at that time either in *number* (whereby the duty to the ſurvivors was increaſed) or in *emoluments*, and ſometimes in both; and many branches were entirely cut off. At this period, therefore, it is moſt probable, that the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER loſt even the little privilege of the *table*; but whether their *Duty* ceaſed at that time I have not been able to diſcern, though it is moſt natural to imagine that their *diurnal* and *nocturnal* offices fell together.

SINCE the Acceſſion of the *Houſe* of *Hanover*, the GENTLEMEN do not ſeem to have been drawn forth into office (further than has been ſhewn) except *once* at the *Revival* of the ORDER OF THE BATH, on which occaſion, when the KNIGHTS attended the KING to the *Chapel Royal* on *Eaſter Sunday* (1726) the Proceſſion was led by the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAM-

BER *. This, however, was but a revocation to an *ancient Branch* of their *Duty*; for it appears from Ceremonials preſerved in the College of Arms, that formerly they *always* made a part of the Proceſſion to the *Chapel Royal* on *Sundays* and *Feſtivals* †. If neceſſary we might go farther back; for, in an account of the marriage of the *Princeſs Mary* daughter of K. Cha. I. with the ſon of *Frederick-Henry* PRINCE of ORANGE (1641), the proceſſion of the KING to the chapel was led "*according to the manner obſerved upon Feſtivals*" by GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER ‡.

WHETHER there is any CHAMBER in *foreign Courts* under this particular appellation, I am not competent to ſay; though there ſeems to have been in ſome of them an apartment of a *private* nature, ſimilar to our *ancient* PRIVY CHAMBER: for Mr. Roger Aſcham, who was ſecretary to Sir Richard Morisine, Ambaſſador to the EMPEROR CHARLES V, tells us in a letter, dated 1551, that he firſt ſaw the EMPEROR in his PRIVY CHAMBER. [v. Aſcham's Works, publiſhed by Bennett, p. 375.] and again, when Mr. Aſcham ſaw the PRINCE of SPAIN, he ſays, it was in his PRIVY CHAMBER. [Idem. p. 385.] This chamber, under whatever title it went, anſwered to Mr. Aſcham's idea of *our* PRIVY CHAMBER, and was, doubtleſs, a *retired* apartment.

THERE ſeems, however, to have been a very ſimilar eſtabliſhment in France, probably founded on our own, under the denomination of "GENTLEMEN *in ordinary of the* KING'S HOUSHOLD," who, if I can rely upon my authority, were at firſt 48 in number, though they were afterwards reduced to 26. They appear to have been inſtituted by K. Henry III. and

* The number is left indefinite in the Ceremonial.

† See the Chapter Books in Off. Arm. ſub annis 1673 & 1686.

‡ Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, Vol. V. p. 345.

conſequently

conſequently are of a modern date: for that King aſcended the throne of France 1574, and was a co-temporary with our Q. Elizabeth. The following are the leading features of their reſemblance to our GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER—They were to keep near the KING's *Perſon*, to receive his commands.—They were ſent on ſundry occaſions, not only into the provinces of France, with the KING's orders, but were ſometimes employed in negotiations with foreign princes.—They likewiſe carried the KING's compliments of *Congratulation* or *Condolence*, &c. &c. I give this account on the faith of a *Galliæ Notitia*, or *Preſent State of France*, tranſlated from the French by R. Wolley *, A. M. and licenſed for the preſs in 1686-7, though not printed till 1691.

THIS, Sir, is all I have to offer on the *Nature* and *Duty*, &c. of theſe GENTLEMEN, now in ſuch great meaſure unemployed; but I ſhall beg leave to trouble you with a few words on the PRIVY CHAMBER *itſelf* (to which I have the honour humbly to belong) ſo often mentioned in this and the preceding memoir.

THIS CHAMBER is always ſtyled HONOURABLE, but properly ſhould be called, as it is at preſent, MOST HONOURABLE †. The ſituation of it is (interiorly ſpeaking) next beyond the *Preſence chamber*,

* It appears from the dedication, that Mr. *Wolley* reſided ſeveral years in France, in the family of *Richard* [Graham] *Viſcount Preſton*, to whom the tranſlation is inſcribed; ſo that the work ſeems to have been prepared for the preſs before the *Viſcount's* attainder (1690), though publiſhed afterwards.

† See before, p. 46. From this *Title* annexed to the *Apartment*, ſome GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER have been miſled to imagine they have a right to be ſtyled HONOURABLE in their addreſs; but there ſeems to be no ground for the preſumption. They are not ſo termed in their Warrants and Certificates. It is the HONOURABLE HOUSE OF COMMONS, collectively ſpeaking; but every member

chamber, communicating with the ſtate *Bed chamber* through an intermediate room, the proper name of which is the *Withdrawing room*; for what we now call *the Drawing room* is a nouvelle affaire—and the room made uſe of for the purpoſe is, properly ſpeaking, the *great Council chamber*. By this transfer, the original idea of a *withdrawing* room is loſt, and the intention totally reverſed, in as much as that room, which by its name implied an apartment of ſtill greater *retirement* than even the *Privy chamber*, is now become in fact the *Chamber of Preſence*, and the *Council room* is uſed for the purpoſe, merely, I apprehend, on account of its amplitude. But let us obſerve what was the etiquette of the *Withdrawing room*—even ſo lately as in the time of King Charles I. It appears from the Ordinances of that Reign above cited, that the QUEEN's *Withdrawing room* was kept ſo ſacredly private, that no *Counteſs* or other *Lady* could come into it without aſking leave—and even the Officers of the PRIVY CHAMBER had not the *Intrée*, except it were to deliver a meſſage to the *Lord* or *Vice chamberlain*, or to the QUEEN in their abſence *.

THE *Drawing-rooms*, as we now call them, were introduced on the acceſſion of KING GEORGE II. and QUEEN CAROLINE, and during the QUEEN's life were held every evening, when all perſons, properly dreſſed, were admiſſible, and the Royal Family played at cards. After the demiſe of the QUEEN, they were continued but twice in a week, and in a few years the evening

ber of it has not *individually* a right to that *affix* to his name. I incline to think, and upon good foundation, that theſe GENTLEMEN have been drawn into the idea by *The Preſent State of Great Britain* publiſhed by *John Chamberlayne, Eſq.* (1708), who ſays that King Henry VII. gave them this *title*—but the errors and crudities of that and the reſt of thoſe compilations are innumerable.

* Houſhold Ordinances of the year 1627.

Drawing-rooms were laid aſide, and the King kept his ſtate in a morning twice every week as at preſent.

Levées are likewiſe of modern date; for antiently the King ſaw his courtiers—the ambaſſadors &c. for the moſt part in his PRESENCE CHAMBER, the room next *without* the PRIVY CHAMBER. In this chamber (of *Preſence*) the King occaſionally dined in ſtate, during which, no perſon, not warranted by his office, was permitted even to ſet his foot upon the haut-pas *. On ordinary occaſions the King dined in his PRIVY CHAMBER, attended by the officers of that room; and afterwards, when he choſe to be ſtill more private, retired to the *Withdrawing room* ſituate as we have ſaid, between the *Privy chamber* and the *Bed chamber*. This room was conſidered as a branch of the *Bed chamber* which had its own officers, the *Gentlemen* (now called the *Lords*), the *Grooms*, and the *Pages* of the *Bed chamber*, and the correſponding room at St. James's is called the *little Drawing room* to this day.

To return to the PRIVY CHAMBER. The Eltham Statutes, ſo often mentioned, ſufficiently ſhew how ſacred this room was kept in the reign of King Henry VIII. for they expreſſly prohibited any acceſs to the KING in his PRIVY CHAMBER by perſons not particularly named: for, ſay they, "no perſon of "what eſtate, degree, or condition ſo ever he be, ſhall from "henceforth preſume to attempt, or be in any wiſe ſuffered or "admitted to come, or repair into the KING's PRIVY CHAMBER, other than ſuch as his Grace ſhall from time to time "call for, or command, except only the miniſters now deputed, or in lieu of them hereafter to be deputed for attendance "in the ſame." The *ſix* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER together with the other officers appertaining to that

* Ordinances of King Charles II.

room

room are likewiſe excepted. The privacy of this room may, primâ facie, ſeem to have been deſtroyed by the number of officers on continual duty in it, viz. the *ſix* GENTLEMEN and the *two Gentlemen Uſhers*, beſides the *Grooms* and the *Page*: but it is to be obſerved that they were ſworn "not to diſcloſe any "ſecret concerning the Royal Perſon or State, that they may "hear within the *Privy Chamber* *;" they were alſo cautioned, and I preſume ſolemnly, "to keep ſecret all ſuch things as "ſhall be done or ſaid in the *Privy-Chamber* †."

AFTER the Reſtoration, the etiquette of the PRIVY CHAMBER was more relaxed; and many perſons were admitted *ex officio* who at that period, from the complexion of the times, were found neceſſary. The buſineſs of the ſtate had encreaſed, the military were in higher eſtimation, and it was proper to countenance many gentlemen of rank and conſequence, though not of quality, who had been friends to the King during his exile: but, at the ſame time, not to trouble you with the words themſelves, the ordinances of this reign exclude all "unknown "perſons." At this time the King kept his court at *Whitehall*. The diſpoſition of the rooms in all our royal palaces is at preſent as nearly as poſſible the ſame, leading in a ſuite through the *Guard Chamber*, (or more properly ſpeaking the *Great Chamber*,) to the *Preſence Chamber*; from thence to the *Privy Chamber*, and then through the *Withdrawing Room* to the *Bed Chamber*; but there was at *Whitehall* two peculiar branches of the *Privy Chamber* neceſſary to be mentioned, viz. the PRIVY GALLERY, and the PRIVY GARDEN ‡. The PRIVY

* The words of the Oath Temp. Eliz. R. left by Drue Drury, a *Gentleman Uſher* of that time, printed in the Antiquarian Repertory, Vol. II. p. 195.

† Eltham Statutes.

‡ There was, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, a *Privy Garden* at the Tower, [v. a draught of the Tower Liberties made from a ſurvey 1597, from which an

PRIVY GALLERY, as may be collected from the Ordinances of King Charles II. led over the arch of *Holbein's* Gate from whence there was a deſcent by ſteps immediately into the Park *. Part of this *Gallery* was accounted as PRIVY CHAMBER, which part is deſcribed in theſe Ordinances to be the ſpace between "the "ſecond door from the Park, at the paſſage over the ſtreet, to "the door of the Ante-Room to the Bed Chamber [which "was] towards the water ſide." At this ſecond door within the GALLERY was a *Gallery Keeper*, to let in ſuch perſons as were qualified to enter, and to exclude all others at his peril.

THE *Privy Garden* was likewiſe accounted as PRIVY CHAMBER; for the Ordinances of King Charles II. expreſsly ſay, "That the *Privy Garden* be obſerved in all particulars as "*our* PRIVY LODGINGS, concerning the ſervice to be perform-"ed there by the *Gentlemen Uſhers* of our PRIVY CHAMBER." A *Gentleman Uſher* attended the *King* when he walked in this *Garden*—not ſo the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, their duty extending no farther than the domeſtic limits of the PRIVY CHAMBER, as they only attended the KING at his going out and coming in †.

an engraving has been publiſhed by your Society.] The Queen had likewiſe both a *Privy Gallery* and a *Privy Garden* at Nonſuch [of which ſee a deſcription in your Archaeologia, Vol. V. p. 429.] There is, or was, likewiſe a *Privy Garden* at Hampton Court. [See Bibliotheca Topographica Britannica publiſhed by John Nichols 1781. No. II. p. 46.]

* A beautiful engraving of this Gate has been happily preſerved by your Society. When it was taken down (anno 1759) in order to widen the ſtreet, the materials were carried to Windſor Great Lodge at the requeſt of his late Royal Highneſs WILLIAM *Duke* of *Cumberland*, who intended to have re-erected it as a termination of the *Long Walk*; but his Highneſs's death prevented it. The ſituation of this Gate, as it remained, after the fire which in the year 1697 deſtroyed all the State Apartments except the Banqueting houſe, may be ſeen, by thoſe who do not remember it, in a print (engraved from an original drawing) in the Antiquarian Repertory, Vol. I. facing p. 86.

† See before, p. 61.

ONE word more, Sir, will ſhew the particular attention, even in fore-ſight, that was paid to this *Chamber* by the above cited Ordinances of King Charles II. as they provide for a poſſible caſe, whether in a *Villa* belonging to the KING, or at the *Seat* of a *Nobleman* whom the KING might honour with a viſit; for, ſay they, "in all houſes, where *one Chamber* is for our "PRESENCE, and PRIVY CHAMBER, the ſaid *Chamber* ſhall be "avoided, and become the PRIVY CHAMBER, after warning "given to cover the table there for our meals, and alſo at other "times, when our pleaſure ſhall be to have the ſame *private*."

FROM what has been ſaid, Sir, we may diſcern that the employment of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER was of a mixt nature—they being originally *confidential Servants* to the KING—uſeful to him as *Gentlemen of education*, properly qualified to be ſent on embaſſies &c. and *Guardians of his Perſon by* NIGHT, as two of them ſlept in an apartment nearly adjoining to the Royal *Bed Chamber*: their *perſonal Authority* was ſingularly deciſive when exerciſed in the KING's name—their ſervice *honourable* in itſelf, and *ornamental* to the COURT.

I have the honour, Sir, to ſubſcribe myſelf

your very obedient

humble ſervant,

SAMUEL PEGGE.

APPENDIX.

APPENDIX.

N° I.

EXTRACT from the LONDON GAZETTE of April 30, 1763.

WHITEHALL, April 18.

THIS day their *Excellencies* M. * QUERINI and M. * MOROSINI *Ambaſſadors Extraordinary from the moſt Serene* REPUBLICK *of* VENICE made their *public Entry*: they were received at Greenwich by *the Right Honourable the* EARL OF GUILFORD †, and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. *Maſter of the Ceremonies*, accompanied by *ſix* GENTLEMEN OF HIS MAJESTY'S PRIVY CHAMBER, and from thence brought by water in his MAJESTY'S *Barges* to the TOWER. *The Right Honourable* LORD BERKELEY OF STRATTON, *Conſtable of the Tower*, received their *Excellencies* at their landing, the *Standard* was diſplayed, and the *Guard* being drawn out upon the wharf, ſaluted their *Excellencies* as they paſſed by: when the coaches were got off the wharf, the *Guns* fired. The Proceſſion began by *ſix* of the *Knight Marſhal's men on horſeback*; then the conducting *Earl's*

* By theſe Initials I preſume the Title of MONSIGNORE is intended.

† Not *ex officio*—but appointed for the purpoſe; and poſſibly (though I ſpeak diffidently) becauſe the Rank of an EARL might quadrate with the SENATORIAL DIGNITY of the AMBASSADORS. Their *Excellencies* were likewiſe received by an EARL on their *public Audience*, [v. Poſtea.]

Coach, in which went *Stephen Cottrell, Esq. Marshal* of the *Ceremonies*; then followed *forty* of their EXCELLENCIES *Footmen*, in very rich liveries, *two* and *two*, after them *eight Gentlemen* of the [their] *Bed Chamber* on horseback *two* and *two*; then the *House Steward* on horseback; then eight *Pages*, *two* and *two*, on horseback; then the *Under Gentlemen of the Horse*; then their Excellencies *Band of Music*, on horseback; then came the *First* GENTLEMAN OF THE HORSE, immediately preceding his MAJESTY's State Coach, in which went THEIR EXCELLENCIES, the *Right Honourable the* EARL of GUILFORD, and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. *Master of the Ceremonies*; then followed one of his MAJESTY's *leading* coaches * with the *two Secretaries* of the EMBASSY in it; then one of the QUEEN's *leading* coaches; and after these a *leading* coach of her Royal Highness the *Princess* DOWAGER of WALES—of his *Royal Highness* the *Duke* of YORK—of her *Royal Highness* the *Princess* AUGUSTA—of his *Royal Highness* the *Duke* of CUMBERLAND—and of her *Royal Highness* the *Princess* AMELIA—each drawn by *six* horses.

IN these coaches went the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER *two* and *two*; these were followed by the *State Coach* of the *most Serene* REPUBLICK *of* VENICE, very richly ornamented and drawn by *eight* horses, and *two* more very rich *Coaches* of their EXCELLENCIES, drawn by *six* horses each, in the last of which went *Two Noble Venetians* of their EXCELLENCIES suite; a numerous train of coaches of the *Nobility* each drawn by *six* horses closed the procession.

WHEN their EXCELLENCIES were arrived at *Somerset-House*, they were complimented on the part of his MAJESTY by the *Right Honourable* LORD BEAULIEU: from the QUEEN, by the *Right*

* By *leading* coaches is to be understood those commonly used for the conveyance of the Retinue of the several branches of the Royal Family respectively, as distinguished from the STATE COACHES.

Honourable

Honourable [illegible] Viscount Cantalupe, her Majesty's *Vice Chamberlain*; from *her Royal Highneſs* the Princess Dowager of Wales, by *William Wentworth, Eſq.* her Royal Highneſs's *Vice Chamberlain* *: from *his Royal Highneſs* the Duke of York by *the Honourable George Weſt, Eſq.* one of his Royal Highneſs's *Grooms* of the *Bed Chamber*: from *her Royal Highneſs* Princess Augusta, by *William Egerton, Eſq.* her Royal Highneſs's *Gentleman Uſher* †: from *his Royal Highneſs* the Duke of Cumberland by *the Honourable General Fitz-William* one of his Royal Highneſs's *Grooms* of the *Bed Chamber*, and from her *Royal Highneſs* Princess Amelia, by —— *Stephens, Eſq.* one of her Royal Highneſs's *Gentlemen Uſhers*.

St. James's, April 21.

This day their *Excellencies* M. Querini and M. Morosini, *Ambaſſadors Extraordinary from the moſt Serene* Republick *of* Venice, were brought to their *publick Audience* of his Majesty, by *the Right Honourable* the Earl of Sussex‡, and Sir Charles Cottrell Dormer, Knt. *Maſter of the Ceremonies*, attended by *ſix* Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, from *Somerſet-houſe*, where they had been, as uſual, entertained by his Majesty for *three*

* This I apprehend to be a groſs miſtake; for though Her Royal Highness had a *Chamberlain* (the Right Honourable *Lord Boſton*) yet ſhe never had a *Vice Chamberlain*; for want of which Officer, the duty, on this occaſion, in the abſence of the *Chamberlain*, devolved upon Mr. *Wentworth*, either as ſenior *Gentleman Uſher* of her *Royal Highneſs's Privy Chamber*, or as the *Gentleman Uſher* of that Department *in waiting*.

† This is likewiſe erroneous; for it ſhould run——one of the *Gentlemen Uſhers Quarterly Waiters* belonging to Her *Royal Highneſs* the Princess Dowager of Wales deputed to attend on the part of *Her Royal Highneſs* the Princess Augusta.

‡ A particular appointment.

days. The Proceſſion and ranging of the Coaches was exactly the ſame as at the *Entry*. Their *Excellencies* were received at *the Court Gate* by SIR SYDNEY MEADOWS, *Knight Marſhal*. The *Foot Guards* upon duty were drawn up in the court, and their Officers ſaluted their *Excellencies* with *Pike, Drum*, and *Colours*, pulling off their hats as they paſſed by. Their *Excellencies* were conducted to the *Little Council Chamber* to reſt themſelves till his MAJESTY was ready; and then having notice ſent by a *Gentleman Uſher*, they ſet forward, having the *Right Honourable the* EARL OF SUSSEX on their *right* hand, and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. *Maſter of the Ceremonies*, on their *left*. They were received at the *Guard-Chamber Door* by the *Right Honourable* LORD VISCOUNT FALMOUTH, *Captain of the Yeomen of the Guard:* at the *Drawing-Room Door* * by the *Right Honourable the* EARL OF LICHFIELD, *Captain of the Band of Gentlemen Penſioners*, who were ranged on each ſide in the *Great Council Chamber* (the Room where his Majeſty gave them Audience), at the door of which their *Excellencies* were received by his *Grace the* DUKE OF MARLBOROUGH, *Lord Chamberlain of his Majeſty's Houſhold*. His *Excellency* M. MOROSINI then made an Harangue to his MAJESTY in *Italian*, which his MAJESTY having anſwered in *Engliſh*, their EXCELLENCIES again retired to the *Little Council Chamber*, till *Her* MAJESTY was ready to receive them, of which having notice by a *Gentleman Uſher*, they went to the QUEEN'S ſide, and were received at the door of Her MAJESTY'S *Guard-Chamber*, by *the Right Honourable* LORD VISCOUNT CANTALUPE her MAJESTY'S *Vice Chamberlain*, and at the door of the *Room* of *Audience*, by the *Right Honourable the* EARL OF HARCOURT, her MAJESTY'S *Lord Chamberlain*, and ſo conducted up to *Her* MAJESTY by the LORD CHAMBERLAIN, the EARL OF SUSSEX,

* Meaning the door of the *Great Council Chamber*, commonly called the *Drawing-Room*.

and

and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. *Maſter of the Ceremonies.* The Audience over, their EXCELLENCIES were reconducted by the EARL OF SUSSEX and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, to their own houſe in the ſame ſtate as they came.

THEIR EXCELLENCIES had Audience of Leave of His MAJESTY on the 13th day of May following, in the uſual form, and were received in the cloſet, when the King conferred the *Honour* of *Knighthood* on M. QUERINI, and preſented him with the rich *Sword* mentioned in the preceding Memoir.

APPENDIX.

N°. II.

EXTRACT from the LONDON GAZETTE of January 17, 1761.

At the Court at ST. JAMES's, the 13th day of January, 1761.

PRESENT,

The KING's moſt Excellent MAJESTY in Council.

WHEREAS His MAJESTY's *Royal Predeceſſors* were pleaſed, from time to time, by their reſpective *Orders made in Council*, to declare and ſignify their pleaſure, that their *Servants* ſhould have and enjoy all *antient Liberties, Rights* and *Privileges*; and that none of their *Servants in ordinary, with Fee*, ſhould be inforced or obliged to bear any *Public Office*, ſerve on *Juries* or *Inqueſts*, or be ſubjected unto any mulct or fine for not ſubmitting thereunto; His MAJESTY this day taking the ſame into conſideration; and thinking it reaſonable that all his *Servants in ordinary, with Fee*, ſhould in regard of their conſtant attendance upon His MAJESTY's PERSON, enjoy the like *Privileges* with thoſe of his *Predeceſſors*, doth therefore hereby order, with the advice of his *Privy Council*, that the LORD CHAMBERLAIN of his MAJESTY's *Houſhold*, in relation to ſuch of his MAJESTY's *ſervants*, who are under his Grace's * Command

* The Duke of Marlborough.

above

above [illegible] LORD STEWARD of His MAJESTY's *Houſ-*
hold [illegible] His MAJESTY's *Officers* of the *Green*
Cloth [illegible] accounted Officers *below ſtairs*; and the
MAST[illegible] the Servants belonging to the *Stables*,
do reſpect[illegible] LORD MAYOR of LONDON and
to his MAJ[illegible] *Peace* within the *City* of WEST-
MINSTER, *Counties* of SURREY and MIDDLESEX, and to the
Mayors, *Sheriffs* and *Bailiffs* of any *Corporation* or *County*, and
to all ſuch as may be therein concerned, whenſoever there ſhall
be cauſe for aſſerting the ſaid *Privilege*; that His MAJESTY hath
thought proper, conformable to the example of his *Predeceſſors* in
this behalf, to order and require, that his *Servants* ſhould have,
hold, and enjoy all the ſaid *Liberties*, *Rights*, and *Privileges*;
and that henceforward none of his *Servants in Ordinary*, *with*
Fee, be enforced, or any ways obliged to bear any *public Offices*,
ſerve on *Juries* or *Inquèſts*, *Watch* or *Ward*, in any place where
they dwell, or elſewhere, nor ſubject to any mulct or fine for
not ſubmitting thereunto; and the LORD CHAMBERLAIN of
his MAJESTY's *Houſhold*, for thoſe Servants *above ſtairs*; the
LORD STEWARD of his MAJESTY's *Houſhold*, and in his abſence
His MAJESTY's *Officers* of the *Greencloth* for the Servants *below*
ſtairs; and the MASTER of the HORSE for the Servants belonging
to the *Stables*, are hereby authorized and required to take ſpecial
care, that this His MAJESTY's pleaſure be duly obſerved and
put in execution; and that His MAJESTY's *Attorney General*,
for the time being, be, and he is hereby *authorized* and *required*,
upon any application made to him by any of His MAJESTY's
Servants in Ordinary, *with Fee*, to cauſe a ſtop to be put to all
proceedings already had, or to be commenced againſt them or
any of them, for refuſing to *watch*, or ſerve on *Juries*, or bear or
undergo any *public Office* or *Employment* above-mentioned: and

His MAJESTY doth hereby further ordain, that this Order be left with the respective *Clerks* of the Peace of LONDON and WESTMINSTER, and the County of MIDDLESEX and SURREY, to be kept among the Records of His Majesty's Sessions, to the intent that due Notice may be given thereunto, and his *Servants* may not be molested by any unreasonable proceedings.

W. BLAIR.

END of PART the FIRST.

CURIALIA:

OR

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT

OF

SOME BRANCHES

OF THE

ROYAL HOUSHOLD, &c. &c.

PART II.

CONTAINING

A MEMOIR,

ADDRESSED TO THE

President of the Society of Antiquaries, London;

REGARDING the KING's Honourable BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS,

FROM ITS ESTABLISHMENT TO THE PRESENT TIME.

By SAMUEL PEGGE, ESQ;

LONDON,

Printed by J. Nichols, Printer to the Society of Antiquaries;
And sold by T. Payne and Son, Mews Gate; B. White and Son,
at Horace's Head, in Fleet-ſtreet; J. Robson, New Bond-ſtreet;
and Leigh and Sotheby, York-ſtreet, Covent-Garden.

MDCCLXXXIV.

L O N D O N

GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS

ROYAL HOUSEHOLD &c. &c.

OF THE

SOVEREIGNS

OF

GREAT BRITAIN.

INTRODUCTION

TO

PART II.

THE primary intention of this Work went no farther than to develop the nature of a few Branches of the Royal Eſtabliſhment, which were either totally worn out; or to ſhew what ſome of them, now in an evaneſcent ſtate, formerly were: but in the courſe of ſuch reſearches I found myſelf led on inſenſibly to what may in ſome meaſure ultimately amount to an œconomical Hiſtory of the Royal Houſhold. The ſubject of the firſt Diſſertation (the *Eſquires* of the *Body*) is entirely vaniſhed, and that of the ſecond (the *Gentlemen* of the *Privy-Chamber*) is little leſs ſo, except in name. Many, however, of the Offices which remain differ ſo widely from the original deſign of their inſtitution, that ſuch traces of them as can be found in their antient ſtate may not be unacceptable to ſome readers. If I ſhould intrude too long with what immediately follows, or with other ſeemingly unimportant ſubjects, it is becauſe no writer has hitherto gone into them at large—and becauſe they contain remanents of Antiquity not totally unworthy of being redeemed from oblivion. I conſider myſelf in the light of an Artiſt clean-

ing a large decayed original Picture, wherein a noble Group of Figures, and a rich extenſive Back-ground may be diſcovered, unleſs they be more obſcured by the unſkilfulneſs of the Operator.

In a Work of this ſort, where the information is of ſo deſultory a nature, it is almoſt impoſſible to purſue any plan which will confine the ſubjects I have to offer within a regular ſeries: I am therefore under a neceſſity of keeping them detached, for want of Muniments which occur ſometimes very ſparingly. It is at beſt but building with mere ſcantlings, of which when a few are found, one does not know where to ſeek for more; and even thoſe, in actual poſſeſſion, will not always ſuit the purpoſe for want of being perfect:—but I have the honour to addreſs myſelf to a learned Society, many Members of which are ſenſible how difficult it is to form a ſtructure with materials ſo widely diſperſed. I can defer but very little to printed authorities—few, indeed, are to be had; when at the ſame time Manuſcripts on ſuch ſubjects are ſeldom preſerved, and thoſe which are, cannot eaſily be found, though I am bound to acknowledge I have met with every poſſible indulgence in the ſearch for them. I truſt, however, that all I have ſaid, or may hereafter throw out upon theſe topics, will have authority, a *Fides Attica*, ſufficient to ſupport itſelf; and I had much rather ſay too little upon good grounds than hazard any thing upon a doubtful bottom.

I beg it may be underſtood that in theſe Diſquiſitions I do not aim at innovation, or the reſtoration of ancient Cuſtoms;—neither would I be thought to inſinuate any comparative ideas between the preſent and former ſtate of things;—but, above all, I ſhould be very ſorry to give the ſlighteſt offence to any Gentleman, or Body of Gentlemen, in the Royal Houſhold, and more eſpecially to the Sovereign; the deſign extending no further than merely to ſhew (as has been ſuggeſted) what were the Manners of the Court in remoter ages, and the primary nature of Offices

fices and Employments in the Regal Eſtabliſhment, which are now ſo much altered in their complexion and features by Time, and by change of Habitudes. In the courſe of ſuch inveſtigations, however, I muſt be excuſed if it ſhould tranſpire that ſome Offices originally menial in their nature, have been emancipated, and are become reſpectable; while others, at firſt honourable, have ſunk into obſcurity—the effect of adventitious circumſtances rather than the conduct of individuals.

To juſtify this Reſearch, we may obſerve, that there is in Mankind an almoſt innate deſire to be acquainted with, and an inclination to revere, in ſome degree, the Manners of their Anceſtors, which extends even to their Paſtimes and Pleaſures: and if ſuch curioſity prompts us to enquire into the ancient modes of living, and the private œconomy of our own family connections, there is a ſtill ſtronger impulſe which urges us to view, as a more enlarged proſpect, the interior domeſtic lives of our former Kings, their Eſtabliſhments, their Courts, and ſuch Ceremonies as differ from thoſe of the preſent age. Theſe we naturally compare with our own times, and even admire for their rudeneſs and ſimplicity, while at the ſame moment we congratulate ourſelves as living at a period of greater refinement. A modern French author * has a paſſage very appoſite to this idea, —" De toutes les parties de notre hiſtoire," ſays he, " il n'en " eſt pas de plus intereſſante que celle qui nous retrace les " moeurs et les uſages de nos Peres. Ce ſont, pour ainſi dire, de " ces vieux portraits de famille, ſur leſquels on ſe plaît toujours " à jetter les yeux. La *Gothicité* du coſtume, l'habillement bi- " ſarre, le maintien roide et empeſé des perſonages qu'ils repre-

* Monſ. de St. Palaye. Memoires ſur l'ancienne Chevalerie. Tom. III. in Preface. Paris. Duodecimo. 1781.

" ſentent,

" ſentent, nous paroiſſent tout-à-fait plaiſans, et nous ne pou-
" vons nous empécher de ſourire du mauvais gout de nos an-
" ceſtres."

The French writers have gone at large into minute details reſpecting their own Eſtabliſhments, and there is ſcarcely a Ceremonial, or even an Office in the Court of France, that has not been handled by them even to prolixity: for the ſake of brevity I refer to Mr. du Tillet,—Pere Daniel de la milice Françoiſe---Mr. Godefroye, &c. &c.

A Sovereign of our own times would find the State and Ceremony of former ages an incumbrance hardly to be endured; it would be like reverting to the days of Chivalry, when no perſon of rank could appear without being buckled up in a Suit of Armour.

Every Century has felt a comparative enjoyment of its luxuries, there having perhaps always been ſomething in each ſucceeding age more refined than in the laſt, and every period, I doubt not, has exulted in ſuch improvements; while any given æra has been perfectly happy in the poſſeſſion of its own, without a preſentiment of ſuperior indulgencies. Our Anceſtors fared as voluptuouſly in their Diet as any of their ſucceſſors have done, according to the taſte of the times;—their Tables were plentifully, though not, as we ſhould now call it, elegantly furniſhed; and they had their Rarities and far-fetched Dainties. Their ſtyle of Cookery varied from ours as much as the Cut of their Cloaths, and the ingredients uſed in it as much as the materials of which their Cloaths conſiſted: yet were their Diſhes and their Dreſs equally ſumptuous. Who now hears of Cloth of Gold, or who eats Cranes and Porpoiſes?—and yet theſe laſt were accounted princely Viands *. Thus has luxury been the ſame in all ages, differing only in its modes and qualities.

* See the Forme of Cury or Roll of Cookery of the year 1390. A private impreſſion, by Guſtavus Brander, Eſq,—Sibi et amicis.

State and Parade, the natural and proper appendages of Courts, have likewiſe relaxed with the times, and been decaying for more than a century, and it is only to be lamented that Dignity has fallen with them. From hence it ariſes, that every trace of antient ſplendour becomes of ſome value, and an object of record;—hereby an old *Cuſtom* is rendered equal in eſtimation with an old *Coin*,---the veſtiges of a *Court* with thoſe of a *Convent*---and the *Manners* of mankind, when living, as worthy of preſervation as their *Monuments* when dead. There are a few, and but a few, who may know, by recollection or by oral tradition, how the Faſhions and Etiquette of the Court have varied for nearly a century: but thoſe few can tell us little of what they were *two* centuries ago, which is only to be diſcovered from very diffuſive evidence, and by an acquaintance with what has been called "Such reading as was never read."

As to the ſubject which immediately follows, it requires the leſs excuſe after the learned Jeſuit, Father Daniel, has condeſcended to give us the Hiſtory of the *Gentilhommes du Bec de Corbin* (its prototype) in the French Eſtabliſhment. Some ſimilar account of the Yeomen of the Guard will be brought forward ſpeedily, which *Corps*, being likewiſe of French extraction, has a claim to its place, as the *Pendant* or *Companion* of the BAND OF PENSIONERS; theſe two being, *at preſent*, the only interior Body Guards of the Perſon of the Sovereign *.

How far I may ſucceed in collecting and arranging the matter which is comprehended in the following parts of this Work, is left to the candour of the public to determine; and theſe few words muſt operate as an Apology for all the Publications on the ſubject, which I may hereafter take the liberty of obtruding upon the World.

* The *Serjeants at Arms* were the original *Garde du Corps* of our Kings, an account of whom will form a ſubſequent Part of theſe Inveſtigations.

CU-

CURIALIA:

OR,

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT, &c.

PART II.

A MEMOIR

Regarding the KING'S *Honourable* BAND

OF

GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS,

From its Eſtabliſhment to the preſent Time*.

To the Preſident of the Society of Antiquaries, London.

SIR,

THIS demi-military Corps is more pregnant with hiſtory than one would imagine from its modern appearance, which differs exceedingly in complexion from what it was at its Inſtitution. The face of it has changed, not only with the faſhions of the times; but, according to ſome writers, with the exigencies of the Court; and though an inſight into its Eſta-

* Read at the Society of Antiquaries, March 21, 1782.

bliſhment and Revolutions may be of no importance to national hiſtory; yet, in a work of this ſort, it may be found to deſerve ſome attention, as having once been *the moſt ſplendid Branch of the* ROYAL ESCORTE.

I am juſtified in calling it *demi-military*, becauſe it was originally compoſed of *Cadets* of *noble Families*, and of the higher *Order of Gentry*, who were afterwards tranſplanted, for the moſt part, into the army.

The time of the Eſtabliſhment of *The Band of* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS (as we now ſtyle it) has been generally mis-attributed, ſome appropriating it to the Reign of King Henry VII*, and others to that of Queen Elizabeth †; but the truth will be found in the Reign of King Henry VIII. and not long after his Acceſſion to the Throne ‡. His father had inſtituted at his Coronation (1485) a body of *fifty Archers*, under the title of *Yeomen* of his *Guard*; but the young and ſpirited King Henry VIII. was too high-minded to be contented with an Eſcorte of *Yeomen*, and therefore erected this new and ſumptuous Troop of GENTLEMEN, to attend his perſon and ſervice ||.

One

* Vide poſtea, in a Caſe ſtated by the *Penſioners themſelves* at the Revolution.

† See Chamberlayne's Preſent States—the Court Regiſters from time to time,—and Truſler's Chronology.

‡ All the Chroniclers agree, that it took place in the firſt year of King Henry VIII. (1509), previous to his Coronation.

|| Lloyd, in his Worthies [Obſervations on the Life of Thomas Howard, Earl of Surry] ſays, "the Band was eſtabliſhed at the inſtance of Sir William Compton." This Gentleman, who was a lineal anceſtor of the Earls of Northampton, is well known to have been high in the Royal favour, and after having ſerved as *Page* of *Honour*, and *Groom* of the *Bed-chamber* ſucceſſively to the King when Duke of York, was, on the King's acceſſion, immediately made a *Gentleman of the Bed-chamber*, *Groom of the Stole*, and ſoon afterwards knighted. Beſides theſe Offices in the firſt inſtance, the King conferred upon him ſeveral Manors, and honoured him with part of the Royal Arms, in augmentation of his

One would expect the moſt accurate account of this inſtitution from Hall (the chronicler), who lived neareſt the time of its being founded; but he will prove to be incorrect, and to have been implicitly followed by Lord Herbert, Holingſhed, Stowe, &c *.

All theſe writers fix the date of the eſtabliſhment, A. D. 1509, the firſt year of King Henry VIII. to which we may ſafely accede. They likewiſe tell us, that the corps was diſbanded very ſoon, on account of the expence; and that it was not revived till the 30th year of King Henry's reign, 1539 †: though this laſt circumſtance is not only controvertible matter, but will be found to be abſolutely fallacious. As Hall's account is ſhort, and the other writers give it in *totidem verbis*, I ſhall trouble you with it, and then proceed to give you other authorities. "This *Band*," ſays he, "conſiſted of FIFTY GENTLE-"MEN to be SPEARS, every of them to have an *Archer*, a *Demi-*"*lance*, and a *Couſtrill* ‡, and every SPEAR to have *three Great* "*Horſes*, to be attendant on his perſon; of the which *Band* the "*Earl* of *Eſſex* was CAPTAIN, and *Sir John Peachy* LIEUTE-"NANT. This ordinance continued but a while, the charges "were ſo great; for there were none of them, but they and "their horſes were apparelled and trapped in *Cloth of gold*, ſilver, "and goldſmiths-work §." Thus it ſhould ſeem that the corps

own. [Dugdale's Baronage.] From thence there appears to have been a ſufficient intimacy, if I may uſe the word in ſuch a caſe, for the King to embrace a propoſal ſo agreable and flattering to his love of ſplendour.

* Hall died in the ſame year with King Henry VIII. 1547. Vid. Wood's Athenæ.

† Lloyd ſays, it was diſcharged ſoon after the inſtitution "by the influ-"ence of that wary Stateſman, Thomas Howard, Earl of Surry." [Lloyd's Worthies, ut ſupra.]

‡ Read *Couſtill*. Vide poſtea.

§ *Cloth of Gold*, ſo much in uſe formerly, muſt have been a very expenſive article, when we conſider the value of money at the time; for the Statute of Apparel, made in the 24th year of this reign, ſpeaks of its being ſometimes upwards of 5 *l.* per yard.

was ſcarcely embodied and completed before it was diſbanded, and lay dormant for 30 years; when, as they tell us, it was revived, (1539), on the King's marriage with the Princeſs Anne of Cleves. On this occaſion, ſay they, the troop was re-eſtabliſhed under the name of PENSIONERS or SPEARS, though much fallen from its original ſplendor; and to theſe "was "aſſigned the ſum of 50*l.* yearly apiece for the maintenance of "Themſelves, and two Horſes, or one Horſe and a Gelding of "ſervice *." So far theſe accounts go of the inſtitution and revival of the body, in which the above writers have copied each other, though Lord Herbert gives (or pretends to give) a reaſon independent of the marriage, which he treats as a mere pretext, and tells us it was owing to the King's fears, on account of diſcontents which prevailed both at home and abroad.

And now, Sir, I am become amenable to you for the ſupport of the allegations which I have brought forward againſt the evidence of chroniclers, hiſtorians, and compilers, who have touched upon the ſubject; and I have the ſatisfaction to produce a tranſcript of the original STATUTES or ORDINANCES for the erection and government of this Corps, together with the OATH to be taken by each individual, ſigned by King Henry VIII. which may be ſeen in the Cottonian Library, with the following title †:

CERTAIN ORDENANCES and STATUTES, deviſed and ſigned by the King's Majeſtie *for a Retinewe of* Speres *or* Men of Arms, *to be choſen of* Gentlemen *that be commen and extracte of noble Blood. Withe a forme of their* OTHE.

* Holingſhed, p. 1574. Stowe's Chron. p. 577.

† Titus. A. XIII. N. 24. This article does not appear in Smith's Catalogue of the Cottonian Library; but it is to be found among the *MS. Addenda* to the *Muſeum-Copy* of that Catalogue. This *Unique* (for ſuch probably it now is) contains five ſmall quarto leaves of parchment indented.

HEN-

HENRY R.

For aſmoche as the King *oure Sovraine Lorde, of his greatt nobleneſſe, wiſedom, and prudence, conſidreth that in this his reame of England be many yong* Gentlemen *of noble Blod, whiche have non excerciſe in the Feate of Armes, in handling and renying the Spere and other faits of Werre on horſbacke like as in other Reames and Cuntreys be dayley practiſed and uſed, to the greate honor and laude of theim that ſoo dothe, his* Highnes *hath ordeyned and appointed to have a Retynue daily of certaine* Speres *called* Men of Armes, *to be choſen of* Gentlemen *that be comen and extracte of noble Blod, to thentent that they ſhall exerciſe the ſaid Feate of Armes, and be the more mete and able to ſerve theire Prince, aſwell in tyme of Werre as otherwiſe, and to have good Wages to leve upon accordingly.*

And to thentent alſoo, that evry of them ſhall knowe howe to order and demeane themſelfs, his Highnes *hath made, ordeyned and eſtabliſhed certaine Ordenances and Statutes following.*

Furſt, evry of the ſaid GENTLEMEN *ſhall have his Harneys complete and all other Habilements mete and neceſſary for him, with twoo Double Horſes at the leeſte for himſelf and his* Page, *convenient and neceſſarye for a* Man of Armes; *alſo his* Couſtrell *, *with a*

* This word is uniformly miſ-written throughout theſe ordinances; for it ſhould evidently be *Couſtil*, an abbreviate of the French word *Couſtillier*, which, according to Cotgrave, ſignifies "The ſervant of a Man of Arms." This is not an error of the pen; for Lord Herbert obſerves, that the word *Cuſtrell* had obtained in our hiſtories, which, in truth, (ſays his Lordſhip) ſhould be *Couſtillier*, and he renders it conformably with Cotgrave, by *Ambactus*, which implies a ſervant, or rather an attendant, not of a menial ſort. Lloyd, in his Worthies, above-cited, gives us the word *Couſtillier*. But Pere Daniel beſt explains this term. The *Coûtillier* he conceives to have been a ſoldier armed with a *Coûtille*, a ſpecies of ſword mentioned by ſome of the antient French writers under the name of *Cultellus*, longer than the ſword then in common uſe, ſharp from the guard to the point, and very ſlender, having three edges. [Hiſt. de France, tom. IV. p. 162. Edit. Amſt. 1720.]

Javelyn

Javelyn or Demye-launce, well armed and horſed as it apperteyneth. And they ſhall obeye in every condicon the Captaine *that ſhall be ordeyned and deputed by the* King's Highnes *or his Deputie* Lieutenante *to have the rule, conduite and gov'nance of theim in all things that thei ſhall be commanded to doo on the* King's *behalf.*

Itm, *That they ſhall make theire abode in ſuche places as the* King's Grace *ſhall appointe theim, or the ſaid* Captaine *or the Deputy* Lieutenante *in the* King's *name, whedder it be in places nigh his Perſon, or elſewhere, upon pain for every ſuch defaulte to loſe ſix days Wages.*

Itm, *Evry of the ſaid* Speres *and* Couſtrellys *ſhall, at evry time, cary with theim theire Horſes, Harneys, and other Habiliments of Werre, as thei have, and ſhall muſter with, not lacking, at any time, pece or parcel of theire ſaid Habilyments of Werre nor Horſes, upon payne of loſing ſix dayes wages for evry ſuche daye and tyme as he ſhall be founden in defaulte, being afore commaunded by the* King, Captaine, *or* Lieutenante.

Itm, *In likewiſe, that non of the ſaid* Speres *nor* Couſtrells *ſhall in nowiſe departe oute of the place where they be aſſigned to make theire ſaid abode, withoute the ſpecial licence of the* King *our Sovraine Lorde, or of theire ſaid* Captaine, *or Deputie* Lieutenante: *and to ſuche as licence ſhall be granted unto by the* King's Grace *or the ſaid* Captaine *or* Lieutenante, *and the daye appointed theim for their returne not to faille withoute lawfull excuſe of ſickneſſe or otherwiſe duely proved, upon paine of the loſſe of double theire Wages for every daye, as thei ſhall faille in comying after the ſaid daye to them lymited and aſſigned.*

Itm, *That evry of the forſaid* Men of Armes *ſhall furnyſhe and make redy twoo good* Archers *well horſed and harneſſed, and to bring theim to muſter before the* King's Grace *or ſuche perſones as his* Grace *ſhall appointe within a monetb at the fartheſt after the daye that they*

they ſhall be commanded ſoo to doo by the King's Grace, *or theire* Captaine *or* Lieutenante, *and not to faille ſoo to doo, upon paine of loſing their Romes, and their bodies to be ponyſhed atte the* King's *pleaſure.*

Itm, *If any of the ſaid* Archers *after thei be admitted fortune to dye, the ſaid* Speres *ſhall not admitte any other in theire place, but ſhall name oon mete perſon for that Rome of* Archer *unto the* King's Highnes, *and bring him to his preſens to be admitted at his pleaſure, or els to the ſaid* Captaine *or* Lieutenante.

Itm, *For the Wages and Ent'teyning of the ſaid* Speres *and* Archers, *the* King's Highnes *hath ordeyned and appointed that evry* Spere *ſhall have and receive for* Himſelfe, *his* Couſtrell, *his* Page *and his two* Archers, thre ſhillings *and* foure pens *ſtrlings* by the daye, *to be paid by hands of the* Treaſourer *of the* King's *Chambre, whiche is appointed by the* King's Highnes *to paye them the ſame. And furthermore the ſaid* Speres *ſhall receive theire ſaid Wages for theim and for theire* Archers *at thend of evry Moneth.*

Itm, *The* King's *pleaſure is, That the ſaid* Lieutenante *ſhall have for the Wages and Entertaining of* Himſelf, *his* Cuſtrell, Page, *and ſix* Archers, ſix ſhillings by the daye, *to be payed in like manner as the ſaid* Speres *ſhall be.*

Itm, *The* King's Grace *woll that the ſaid* Captaine *or* Lieutenante, *with ſuche other pſones as his* Grace *ſhall appointe ſhall evry quarter of the yere as it ſhal be the* King's *pleaſure, ſee the Muſters of the ſaid* Men of Armes *and theire Company, if any of them lakke Horſe, Harneys, or if any of theire ſaid Horſes and Harneys be not ſufficient as they ſhould be: if thei be not, that they be commanded by the forſaid* Captaine *or* Lieutenante *to provide for ſuche as ſhal be good and ſufficient upon raiſonable daye by the ſaid* Captaine *or* Lieutenante *to be appointed. And ſuche as ſoo be founden in defaulte, that the ſaid* Captaine *or* Lieutenante, *ſhall reſtraine his*

Wages in the hands of the ſaid Treaſourer *of the Chambre till he be ſufficiently apparelled of ſuche thinges as he ſoo ſhall lakke, and thus the ſaid* Captaine *or* Lieutenante *to doo upon payne of the* King's *diſpleaſure, and loſing of his Rome.*

Itm, *To thentent that the ſaid* Speres *ſhall alweys be in the more Arredynes* with theire Retynue and ſuche Horſe and Harneys and other things as ſhal be neceſſarye in that behalf, the* King's *pleaſure is, That the ſaid* Speres *ſhal be redy alweys to muſter befor the ſaid* Captaine *or* Lieutenante *at ſuche tyme or tymes as they ſhal be by them commaunded ſoo to doo.*

Itm, *It is the* King's *Commaundement That the ſaid* Speres *and theire Companye ſhall obſerve and kepe good rule and gov'nance, and nothyng attempte againſte the* King's *ſubjects, contrarye to his lawes, and that thei duely and truely content and paye in redy money for vittalls and all other neceſſaries that thei ſhall take for themſelfs theire ſaid Servants and Horſes upon payne to be poniſhed after the* King's *pleaſure. And if any of theim ſhal be founde three times culpable in any ſuch defaults, then he or thei to be deprived of his Rome and his body to be poniſhed at the* King's *pleaſure.*

Itm, *It is the* King's *pleaſure and commaundement that none of the ſaid* Speres *ſhall preſume to take his Lodging by his owne auctorite but be ordered theirin, and take ſuch Lodging as by the* King's *Herbergiers †, for that purpoſe deputed, ſhall be appointed unto theim upon ponyſshement aforſaid.*

Itm, *It is the* King's *Pleaſure and Commaundment that non of the ſaid* Speres *ſhall geve Wages unto any* Archer, Couſtrell *or* Page *of any other* Spere, *nor to reteigne him as his ſrvante, excepte he be put to him by his own Maſter, being oon of the ſaid* Speres.

* *Readineſs,* † *Harbingers,*

The

The OTHE.

I ſhal be true and faithfull Subjecte and Servante unto oure Soverine Lord King *HENRY the* VIIIth, *and to his Heirs, Kings of England, and diligently and truely give myn Attendance in the Rome of oon of his* Speres, *and I ſhal be reteyned to no man, pſone, ne pſones of what degre or condicon ſoever he be by Othe, Lyvree, Bagge* [Badge], *Promiſe or otherwiſe, but oonly to his* Grace, *without his eſpecial Licence*. And I ſhall not hereafter knowe or here of any thing*

* Sir William Bulmer was in the reign of Hen. VIII. rebuked for ſuffering himſelf to be retained by the Duke of Buckingham, while he was in the King's ſervice. [Hall's Chronicle, Hen. VIII. fol. 59.] A *Retainer* according to Strype [Memorials, Vol. III. p. 479.] "was a ſervant not menial, (that is, continually "dwelling in the houſe of his Lord or Maſter) but only wearing his *Livery*, and "attending ſometimes on ſpecial occaſions upon his perſon. The Livery was "wont to conſiſt of hats or hoods, badges, or other ſuits of one garment by the "year. None could have Retainers but by licence from the Crown. Queen "Mary was very liberal in granting licences; but Queen Elizabeth was as "ſparing. Their tendency was often bad in keeping up animoſities between "great men, and fomenting rebellion, ſo that Statutes have been occaſionally "made to regulate them*." Feuds of this kind were ſtill more common in France formerly, and even ſo lately as the reign of Henry III. (anno 1579), we find the ſame Policy was adopted, on account of the factious temper of the nobility, when the Order of the Holy-Ghoſt was founded; for the Knights were ſworn, "de ne prendre Gages, Penſions, ou Eſtat d'autre Prince quelconque!" [Pere Daniel, Hiſt. de France, tom. VI. p. 65.].

Lord Verulam relates a ſtory of the Earl of Oxford, who once entertained King Henry VII. "At the King's going away, the Earl's ſervants ſtood in their "*Livery-coats*, with *Cognizances*, ranged on both ſides, and made the King a "lane. The King called the Earl to him and ſaid—"Theſe handſom gentlemen "and yeomen, which I ſee on both ſides of me, are ſure your menial ſervants!" "The Earl ſmiled and ſaid, they are moſt of them my *Retainers*, they are come "to do me ſervice at ſuch a time as this, and chiefly to ſee your GRACE. The

* Anno 8 Edw. IV. Chap. 2. The Statute ſays, "None ſhall give *Liveries* but to their MENIAL ſervants."

thing that shal be hurtefull or prejudiciall to his moſt royal pſon, ſpecially in treaſon, but I shal withstand it to th' uttermoſt of my power, and the ſame with all diligence, to me poſſible, diſcloſe to the King's Highnes *or to the* Captaine *of the ſaid* Speres *or his Deputie* Lieutenante *or ſuche others of his Counſaile as I ſhall know woll diſcover the ſame unto his* Grace. *I ſhall not leye to pledge ne putte awaye ſuche Horſe & Harneys as I nowe have muſtered with before the* King *to any pſone or pſones, ne put oute of ſervice any* Archer, Cuſtrell, *or* Page, *that I have nowe with me, onles I have before ſhowed cauſe reſonable ſoo to doo to the* King *or the ſaid* Captaine *or his Deputie* Lieutenante *in his abſence: nor I ſhall knowe of any of my Company in likewiſe to leye to pledge or put away any Horſe, Harneys, or* Archers, *but that I ſhall ſhowe the ſame to the* King's Grace, *his ſaid* Captaine *or Deputie* Lieutenante, *in as brief tyme as I conveniently maye. I ſhall alſo truely and faithfully to my power obſerve and kepe from this daye forwards all and evry article comprized in a Boke aſſigned with the* King's *Hand, and all manner of* Statutes *and* Ordinances *in the ſame and in evry of theim conteined. On this I ſhall be obeyſaunte unto my* Captaine *or Deputie* Lieutenante, *and the commaundements I ſhall obſerve and*

" King ſtarted a little, and ſaid; By my faith, my Lord, I thank you for my " good cheer, but I may not endure to have my laws broken in my ſight. " My Attorney muſt ſpeak with you." And, continues Lord Verulam, it is part of the report, that the Earl compounded for no leſs than 15,000 marks. [Hiſt. of Hen. VII. p. 120.]

It may ſeem neceſſary to explain the term *Livery*, as it appears a very equivocal word in authorities, which I ſhall frequently have occaſion to cite. The root of the Term is the French *Liverée*, and applies to all things *deliver'd* from the offices of the Royal Houſhold reſpectively, viz. *Robes and Garments*, as well as *Diet*, *Wood*, *Candles*, &c. [Vid. the Northumberland Houſhold Book.] The word is now worn out in its original ſenſe, and is confined merely to a party-colour'd ſuit of Cloaths given to Men-ſervants.

kepe at all tymes, ſoo the ſame be or concerne the ſervice of the King's Grace. *And all ſuche cauſes ſecrete as ſhall be ſhewed unto me by the* King's *Grace, the ſaid* Captaine *or Deputie* Lieutenante, *I ſhall keep counſaill without diſcov'ring of the ſame to any pſone or pſones till I be commaunded. I ſhall deligently geve my attendaunce with my Retynue upon the* King's Grace *in ſuche wiſe as I ſhall be commaunded and appointed by the ſaid* Captaine *or his ſaid Deputie* Lieutenante *and not abſente or departe from the Courte without Licence of the* King *or of the ſaid* Captaine *or his Deputie* Lieutenante, *in his abſence, by the ſpace of foure dayes. And alſo all ſuche Horſe, Harneys, and other Habiliments of Werre as I nowe have muſtered with before the* King's Grace, *the ſaid* Captaine *or Deputie* Lieutenante, *be my own proper goods and non other man's: nor alſo I ſhall not muſter at any tyme before the* King's Grace *the ſaid* Captaine *or Deputie* Lieutenante, *with any* Archer, Couſtrell *or* Page, *but oonly with ſuche as I have reteyned with me to ſerve the* King's Highnes *for the ſame entent. And thus I ſhall well and truly obſerve and kepe, and ſerve the* King *in the ſaid Rome of oon of his* Speres. *So helpe me* GOD *and theis holy* Evangelies.

The preciſe date of theſe Ordinances is not ſpecified, though we have eſtabliſhed it by other authorities, neither is the intended number of the SPEARS aſcertained; but it is probable that the time of completion was not then arrived, and that the Corps was merely in a ſtate of formation. As to the number, it ſeems to have waited for the KING's pleaſure to be further made known, as the foregoing Statutes only ſay *certain* SPEARS, neither are the CAPTAIN and LIEUTENANT mentioned by name, though the

printed accounts ſay that the *Earl* of *Eſſex* was CAPTAIN, and *Sir John Peachy* LIEUTENANT *.

In the preamble, Sir, we ſee the ground-work, the model, and the intention of the Inſtitution. It was well underſtood at that time what a *Man of Arms* was, and it explains to us what was then likewiſe expreſſed metonymically by a SPEAR, thereby comprehending all other appendages, the weapon implying the perſon, as in modern military language a *Drum* frequently expreſſes the *Drummer*, and a *Trumpet* the *Trumpeter*, &c †. Theſe Gen-

* Holingſhed indeed has inverted them; but there can be no doubt that the Earl was the ſuperior officer. This *Earl of Eſſex* was *Henry Bourchier*, who was nearly related to the King, his mother being Anne Woodville, ſiſter to Elizabeth Woodville, (the Queen of King Edward the IVth,) the King's Grandmother; ſo that he was maternally firſt couſin to the Queen of King Henry VII. and but one degree more remote from King Henry VIII. The Earl's grand-father had married Iſabel, ſiſter to Richard Duke of York, and the alliance with Royalty commenced before his father's marriage, and the pedigree ſtands thus:

Richard Plantagenet,
Earl of Cambridge,
Second Son of | Edmund of Langley

Rich. D. of York.		Iſabel of York	= Hen. Bourchier, E. of Eſſex.
	Rich. Woodville E. Rivers		
K. Edw. IV. =	Eliz. Woodville	Anne =	Wm. Viſcount Bourchier. Ob. vitâ Patris.
Eliz. of York. =	K. Hen. VII.		Hen. Bourchier, E. of Eſſex, *The firſt Captain of the Band of Gentlemen Penſioners.*
K. Henry VIII.			

† So P. Daniel.—Tous les Gendarmes etant armez de pied en cap, et ayant pour une de leur armes offenſives la *lance* qui leur fut long-temps propre, c'eſt ponr cela que dans le ſtyle des Hiſtoriens de ce temps-la, *Gendarme*, *Homme d'Armes*, *Lance*, *Lancier*, etoit la même choſe. [Hiſt. de France, ſub anno 1532.]

The

Gentlemen were to appear in armour, for by the word *Harneſs*, at that time was meant a compleat Suit of Armour*. The attendants of each SPEAR are deſcribed to be a *Page*, a *Couſtill*, and Two *Archers*, though the Chroniclers give him but *one Archer*, a *Demi-Lance* and a *Couſtill*: but a *Couſtill* and a *Demi-Lance* appear to have been the ſame from the foregoing Ordinances, where it was ſaid the Couſtill was to carry a Javelin *or* Demi-Lance. By *Double-horſes*, I preſume, are meant *Great* or *managed Horſes*, which probably were *Chevaux entiers* and not *Geldings* †. To theſe Attendants were to be added Two good

The French likewiſe apply the term *Guidon*, *Cornette* and *Enſign*, both to the *Standards* ſo called, and to the bearers of them, as we do, though in the laſt caſe they ſpeak with a differential article, which our language will not admit. Thus Pere Daniel—"Cette eſpece d'Etendart a donné ſon nom à celui qui la "porte: car on dit *la Cornette* pour ſignifier l'Entendart, et *le Cornette* pour ſigni-"fier l'officier qui la porte." [Hiſtoire de la Milice Françoiſe. Tom. II. p 63.]

* This appears from Wills, &c. Sir Robert Wingfield, by his Will, proved, Nov. 12, 1539, gives "his Target of Steel, and his light *Harneſs*, and twelve "footmens *Harneſs* to his nephew John Wingfield:" And further bequeaths his late brother's "*compleat Harneſs*" to his nephew, Richard Wingfield. [Vid. Anſtis's Regiſter of the Garter, p. 230.] Thomas Beaufort, Duke of Exeter, (by his Will, proved 1426) bequeathed to Ignatius Clifton, "Unum *Harneſium* Armorum." [See the Royal Wills, publiſhed by J. Nichols, 1780, p. 162.]

† The *Great* or *Double Horſes* then in uſe, we may ſuppoſe, were ſuch as have been ſince ſeen in our heavy cavalry, on which, in caſes of neceſſity, one horſemen could take up behind him another who was diſmounted, or a perſon on foot who was, wounded, or, in certain ſituations, a captive. Thus, in the laſt inſtance, we find that when Sir Thomas Wyatt ſurrendered himſelf, in the reign of Queeen Mary, he was brought by Sir Maurice Berkeley from Temple-Bar to Whitehall, on the ſame horſe behind him; as was Sir Thomas Cobham, behind another gentleman. [Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 90. Vid. alſo, Godwin's Annals of Queen Mary.] Froiſſart mentions theſe horſes, which Lord Berners tranſlates *double horſes*, [Chap. 149]. The French term is *Rouſſins*, which ſee in

good *Archers*, on horſeback, and in Armour. For the ſupport of this their Retinue each SPEAR was to have a daily Pay of *three Shillings* and *four Pence*, a much more conſiderable Sum at that time than the 50*l.* which the printed accounts have allowed; for the reſult of three ſhillings and four pence per diem, is 60*l.* 16*s.* 8*d.* per annum.

The regulation and diſcipline of this Troop appears every where in the Statutes to have been an object of great attention, as the mulcts for abſence and irregularity are very large; and the Oath, which is ſpecific and prolix, ſeems intended to have been taken publicly in the field, after a muſter, in the preſence of the King, or commanding Officer, and the whole Band*. I would take this opportunity of obſerving, Sir, that the two perſons in armour, with *Spears* in their hands, mounted on horſes differently capariſoned, and who immediately follow the Duke of Suffolk and Sir Anthony Browne, in the print of the Siege of Portſmouth, [1545] lately engraved by your Society, ſeem to be a SPEAR and his *Couſtill*; and there appears to be ſeveral others of each ſort, as likewiſe *Archers*, ſcattered up and down in the general groupe of figures in that print.

Thus much, Sir, for the inſtitution of the SPEARS; and if we are to credit the printed accounts we ſhall hear no more of them for thirty years, viz. till the year 1539. They tell us that the expence was too great for them to exiſt long, and that the *Corps* was very ſoon *diſbanded* after it was formed, (though they

Cotgrave. *Horſes* for *draught* were, at that time, diſtinguiſhed by the term *trotting* horſes. [Northumberland Houſhold-book, p. 127.]

* The words, we may recollect, run—That the Horſe, Harneſs, and other Habiliments of war—"as I *now* have muſtered with *before the King's Grace*, the "ſaid *Captaine* or Deputie *Lieutenante*, &c."

give in the charge at leſs than it really was) and that the revival was made in a very ſparing manner, unworthy of its firſt eſtabliſhment; for that though the SPEARS were allowed for their yearly ſalaries 50*l.* each, yet they were only bound to ſupply two horſes, or, optionally, "One Horſe, and a Gelding of Service*."

There is, indeed, reaſon to believe that their Pay was leſſened, and that their Retinue was diminiſhed at the above period; but it had taken place long before the year 1539: for if we look into the Houſhold Statutes, made at Eltham, 1526, we ſhall there find the *Corps* complete, and fully *officered*, and (for the firſt time that we have good authority to call it ſo) under the preſent Title of THE BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. In order to raiſe the ſtipends of the additional officers, the pay of each Penſioner ſeems to have ſuffered a conſiderable defalcation, (being reduced to 50*l.*) and it is preſumable that on account of ſuch abatement, ſome part of their Retinue was diſpenſed with. About this period (or ſoon after) the *Battle-Axe* was probably introduced, as they began now to operate *on foot* in the *Court*, as well as *on horſeback* in the *Field*; in which former caſe they might carry the *Pole* or *Battle-Axe*, though they uſed their *Spears* on horſeback. If the Corps was actually new modelled, the KING, who had formed it, (as the original Statutes ſay) on a Plan adduced from foreign countries, might adopt the *Battle-Axe* from the French, as it approximates very much to the *Becs de Corbin*, borne by ſome of the moſt ancient Houſhold Troops *in France*.

Having mentioned the *Becs de Corbin* in the French eſtabliſhment, I muſt beg leave, Sir, to inſiſt for a few moments on the ſubject, from whence it will appear that both Corps, in

* Vide Holingſhed, fol. 1574.

their

their eſtabliſhment and governance, have mutually borrowed from each other. In the account given us by Pere Daniel *, a very exact parallel is found between our GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS in early times, and the *Gentils-hommes du Bec de Corbin* in France, who were formerly regarded, during ſeveral Reigns, as the *principal* and moſt *honourable* Guard of the King, being ſtyled "La *Grande* Garde du Corps *." Let us examine the features of them reſpectively, which will confirm the reſemblance. The French Corps was originally compoſed of *one Hundred Gentlemen* of rank and conſequence, under the command of a *Captain*, a *Lieutenant*, and an *Enſign*, and were expreſsly inſtituted by Louis XI. (1474), as a *Garde du Corps*. Each of theſe *Gentlemen* was armed with a *Lance*, and attended by a *Man of Arms* and *Two Archers*, and as they were for the moſt part formed from the Gentlemen of the King's Houſhold or *Penſioners*, "Gentils-hommes de ſon Hotel ou *Penſionaires*," the Troupe was called *The Company of the Hundred Gentlemen of the King's Houſhold, appointed for the Guard of his Perſon*—["La Compagnie de "Cent Gentils-hommes de la Maiſon du Roy ordonnés pour la "Garde de ſon Corps †."] This, I cannot doubt, Sir, was the foreign eſtabliſhment, to which our K. Hen. VIII. alludes in the Proeme to the Statutes for the formation of his *Band* of *Penſioners* now before us, and the following traits will ſtrengthen the ſurmiſe.

We have ſeen our own *Band* furniſhed from the prime of our Gentry, or from the younger branches of our antient Nobility;—and P. Daniel tells us, on authority, that there was

* Hiſtoire de la Milice Françoiſe. Tom. II. p. 99. et ſeq. † Idem. p. 100.

† A ſecond Company of 100 was added to them by Ch. VIII. 1497, which was ſtyled Extraordinary, though they both went collectively under the original denomination of *The Hundred Gentlemen*. Theſe laſt were entirely aboliſhed by Louis XIV. 1688.

not

not a family of antiquity in France which had not, at different times, one of it enrolled in the Band of *The hundred Gentlemen* *.

Each of theſe *Gentlemen*, like our own, had, as has been ſeen, *Two Archers*, whom he furniſhed with *Horſes* and *Arms*, at his own expence †.

In point of degradation, the French *Band* kept pace with our own, wherein we ſhall find hereafter Orders to prevent the admiſſion of perſons improperly qualified with reſpect to rank, and without the entire approbation of the Sovereign: for P. Daniel tells us, that by an Ordinance of Hen. III. (A. D. 1585.) the Captain was enjoined not to admit any into the Corps who were not of competent gentility by birth, and that each *Gentleman*, previous to his admiſſion, ſhould be preſented to the King for his ſanction. [Vid. the Orders reſpecting our Band, poſtea ‡.]

As the French Band was denominated *Gentils-hommes du Bec de Corbin*, from the *Arms* they made uſe of; ſo ours, we ſhall find, were frequently called *Gentlemen of the Axe* ||.

* He cites the author of a book intituled, "Les Origines des deux Compagnies," whoſe words are—"Je puis dire qu'il n'y a guerres d'ancienne Maiſon de Gentils-hommes qui ne trouve quelq'un des ſiens enrôlé en l'une de ces deux Compagnies." [P. Daniel, ubi ſupra, p. 101.]

† "Chacun de ces *Gentils-hommes* avoit *deux Archers* q'il entretenoit, montoit, et armoit à ſes depens ſur ſa ſolde. [P. Dan. ut ſupra, p. 101.]

‡ "Defend (ſa Majeſté) aux Capitaines d'enrôler en leurs Compagnies que Gentils-hommes de la qualité requiſe, leſquels à cette fin ils lui preſenteront auparavant que de les recevoir." [P. Dan. ut ſupra, p. 105.]

|| The French were ſometimes ſtyled *Becs de Faucon*—and from their Pay, which was Twenty Crowns [Vingt Ecus] per month, (I preſume a large and ſingular allowance) they have been likewiſe called, "Les Gentils-hommes *des Vingt Ecus*." [P. Daniel. ut ſupra, p. 103.]

The rank of the *Captain* (or the Commander for the moment in the French Court) appears from the Orders cited by P. Daniel, wherein it is ſaid, that wherever the *Hundred Gentlemen* attended the King with their Arms, the *Captain* (or the chief in command) ſhould walk neareſt to the King, on his right hand *.

On the other hand, Sir, we may now obſerve a point in which *our* practice ſeems to have given the impreſſion to the French Court. The *Band* of our GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, as we ſhall ſoon ſee, was allowed the liberty of *quarterly-waiting*, by detachments, in the reign of its founder, King Henry VIII. which circumſtance was afterwards introduced into the French eſtabliſhment under Hen. III. (A. D. 1585.) when *The Hundred Gentlemen* were admitted to the ſame indulgence: for the French Ordinances direct that thoſe who were in waiting (*en quartier*) ſhould be on duty at a given hour †.

The Penalties likewiſe for non-attendance were loſs of wages, and diſmiſſion for aggravated offences, which appear to have been the puniſhments preſcribed by our Orders from time to time. [See the reigns of Q. Eliz. and K. K. Ch. I. & II. poſtea ‡.]

* P. Dan. ut ſupra. Vid. poſtea, in the Reign of King Charles II. for the parallel.

† "Veut auſſi ſa Majeſté, que les Gentils-hommes etant *en quartier*, ſe trou-
" vent en ſon Antichambre des les ſix heures du matin, pour l'accompagner avec
" leurs Haches, comme ils ont accoutume, juſq' à ſon Diner, et l'apres-dinée,
" juſq' à ſon Souper." [P. Dan. ut ſupra, p. 105.]

‡ " Le premier jour de chacun Quartier le Capitaine ou le Lieutenant entrant
" en charge (c'eſt à dire en quartier) preſentera à ſa majeſté les cinquante Gen-
" tils-hommes de ſervice, et les lui nommera: les defaillans perdront leurs
" gages." [P. 105.] and further, " Enjoint ſa Majeſté auſdits Gentils-hommes
" d'obſerver de point en point tout le contenu cy-deſſus ſous peine de Caſſation."
[Id. p. 106.]

Again,

Again, Sir, *The Hundred Gentlemen* had a Table in the King's Houſe—" Ils avoient les Privileges des *Commenſeaux.*" [P. Daniel, p. 107.] as had our GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS formerly, which will be diſcernible when we come to the Reigns of Q. Eliz. and K. James I.

The French Corps in their attendance on the Sovereign, appeared ſometimes *on Horſe-back*, and at othor times *on foot*, according to the occaſion, and ſuch, we ſhall ſoon have opportunity to obſerve was the caſe of our GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. In theſe ſituations both were armed reſpectively with *Lances*, on Horſeback, and on Foot, with *Axes*:—Thus Pere Daniel, " Ils avoient outre la *Lance*, la *Hache d' Armes*, dont " ils ſe ſervoient lorſqu' ils etoient de Guet ou de Garde aupres " de la Perſonne du Roy." [Ibidem, p. 107.] To go ſtill farther, the poſition and preciſe diſtance from the Royal Perſon, to be obſerved by the Commander of *The Hundred Gentlemen* in either caſe, is preſcribed by the Ordinances of Hen. III. with moſt minute exactitnde *.

This, P. Daniel informs us, Sir, was the ſtate and diſcipline of *The Hundred Gentlemen* in the year 1585 under Hen. III. of France, to which we may add that our own body of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, under Q. Elizabeth (the contemporary Sovereign of England) was by no means inferior in dignity, or in any thing but number, as we ſhall perceive, when we arrive at that period.

The ſervice of the French Corps, at the time when P. Daniel wrote (1708) was reduced to mere occaſional parade, on great and ſolemn occaſions, when they walked before the King with

* " Si ſa Majeſte eſt à pied, ceux des dits Rangs, qui ſeront à coté d'elle, ne " paſſeront point en arrière le pommeau de ſon Epée; et ſi elle eſt à cheval, ne ſe " tiendront point plus en arrière que la pointe de ſon pied." [Id. p, 106.]

their Inſignia of Office [the *Becs de Corbin*] as they did, he tells us, when Louis XIV. came of age, 1651—at his marriage, 1660—and at a ceremonial of the Knights of the Order of the Holy Ghoſt, in the following year *.

But to return, Sir, to our own PENSIONERS. King Henry had his grand interview with Francis I. of France, between Guines and Ardres, 1520, and out of compliment (but I ſpeak without authority) might affect a ſimilar appearance in his Body-guard at the interview with what he knew was uſed by King Francis:—but be that as it may, ſeveral of theſe GENTLEMEN with their *Battle-Axes*, are diſcernible in the picture of the *Champ de Drap d'or*, which leads one to imagine that the *Battle-Axe* had obtained about that period.

Cardinal Wolſey, who was never tardy in apeing Royalty where he could, had a ſimilar, though humbler eſcorte of *Pole-Axes*, when he was Lord High Chancellor: for beſides his Two *Croſs-Bearers*, as *Arch-Biſhop*, and his Two *Pillar-Bearers*, as *Cardinal*, mounted on great Horſes, who preceded him, he had likewiſe, when he went to Weſtminſter-Hall, on his mule, as

* It is a little ſingular that they are not here mentioned on the Coronation of Louis XIV. (1654) where I find from another account they made a part of the cavalcade on the King's return from the cathedral of Rheims to the Palace of the Arch-biſhop, being ſtyled, "Les cent Gentils-hommes de la Maiſon du Roy "avec leurs Becs de Corbin." [See le Sacre de Lous XIV. printed at Paris, 1720, 12mo. p. 332.] Monſieur Menin, in his general deſcription of the Coronation of the Kings and Queens of France, [Ln^e. 1755, 8vo. p. 159] likewiſe gives them a ſpecific place at all Coronations:—and yet they are not mentioned in the printed account of the Coronation of the preſent King Louis XVI. (1775) publiſhed at the moment.

Lord

Lord Chancellor, four Gentlemen on foot about his perſon, bearing each a *Pole-Axe* in his hand *.

But to proceed. It is very clear, if this Body of SPEARS ever was diſbanded, that the period of the revival muſt have been egregiouſly miſtaken; for in the year 1526, the Corps ſtands thus in the Statutes of Eltham.

A CAPTAIN, with the Salary of - -	200 Marks
A LIEUTENANT, - - -	100 Pounds
A STANDARD BEARER †, - - -	100 Marks
Fifty GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, each	46*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* ‡
A CLERK of the CHEQUE - - -	40 Pounds §
A HARBINGER, - - -	18 Pounds.

This taken in the groſs is an enlargement rather than a reduction; for the *Captain*, in the original Eſtabliſhment, does not appear to have had any ſalary ||. The *Standard-Bearer*, the *Clerk of the Cheque*, and the *Harbinger*, were additional officers,

* Cavendiſh's Life of Wolſey, p. 29. Sir Thomas More, in a Speech to the Houſe of Commons was not a little ſevere upon the Cardinal, on account of his *Pole-Axes*. [More's Life of Sir Thomas More, p. 51.] He had alſo *Yeomen of his Guard*. Cavendiſh, p. 20.

† The correſponding Officer of the Yeomen of the Guard is ſtyled *Enſign*, which ariſes from the French diſtinction, where the term *Cornet* or *Standard-bearer* has always been peculiar to the *Horſe*, and that of *Enſign* to the *Foot*, as we now uſe them. [V. P. Daniel, Hiſt. de la Milice Françoiſe, Tom. II. p. 64.]

‡ Apparently a ſingular ſum—but it will analyze into *ſeventy Marks*, an uſual Houſhold computation, when wages did not run *per diem*.

§ This was then an office of much buſineſs and attendance, and therefore merited a large ſalary; for ſuch 40*l.* was at that time.

|| The *Captain* at the Inſtitution had probably the allowance of a *Gown* only, in like manner as the *Captain* of the *Yeomen* had till the Reſtoration. [redacted]

and

and as to what regards the *Penſioners* themſelves, this account is ſo free from error that they are mentioned *by name* *.

We have now, Sir, got a *Standard-Bearer*, and you will aſk what was the device upon the *Standard*? I muſt refer you to Dr. Chamberlayne's Angliæ Notitia of the year 1672, who tells us it was *St. George's Croſs*, and that it was likewiſe *four Bends*: but in this laſt bearing he does not give the colour of the Field, or of the Charge. The former of theſe is obvious; but the latter is not ſo ſolvable, unleſs it can be preſumed (if the authority is allowed) that the Band had *Two* Standards; the one to be uſed when they muſtered before the KING, and the other on their private or periodical muſters, and which might very well carry the Arms, Creſt, or Device of one of their CAPTAINS.

It cannot be ſuppoſed that at this period there ſhould be a *Standard-Bearer* without a *Standard*, though the office is ſo circumſtanced at preſent; nay, there is good reaſon to think there actually were two Standards in the reign of K. Edward VI. for in a MS. account of the payment of ſundry officers of houſhold, in the fixth year of that King, I find a payment "to "John Pyers, Clerk of the Cheque to the Guard, for the hire "of a houſe to lay the *Great Standards*, with the rich *Coats* "and *Halberds*—1*l.* 14*s.* 8*d.*" This ſeems, primâ facie, to relate both to the *Penſioners* and the *Yeomen*; but it will appear [redacted] that the *Yeomen* had no Officer of the denomination of *Enſign*, till after the Reſtoration. The rich *Coats* and *Halberds* I place to their account; but the *Stan-*

* Vid. poſtea, where, at the cloſe of this Reign, the *Names* are given.

dards

dards muſt (for the reaſon given) be confined to the PENSIONERS, and comprehend the *Two* belonging to the BAND*.

Leaving theſe Gentlemen in the year 1526, in the ſtate we have ſeen, they are found avowedly by all the chroniclers not inconſpicuous on the ceremonial of the reception of the Princeſs Anne of Cleves (1539): for though it is well known, that the match was not only political, but, after a previous interview at Rocheſter, diſguſting to the King; yet he determined to pay the Princeſs all poſſible reſpect, and her Highneſs was received with great ſtate by the King and his ſuite on Blackheath, at the foot of Shooter's Hill. She ws accordingly accommodated in a rich pavillion, till the KING and his train arrived, when he was accompanied by the *Corporation* of *London*, *Knights*, and *Eſquires*, and the proceſſion was cloſed by the *Fifty* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. Of this Body each had *Two Horſes*, one for himſelf and the other for an attendant, and accordingly my author (Holingſhed) goes on, and tells us, that, "behind the GENTLEMEN ſtood the *ſerving-men*" [the *Couſtills*] "in good order, well horſed and apparelled; that

* As to the KING's *Great Standard*, there was at this time and long afterwards, an official *Standard-bearer*, ſuch were in the reign of King Hen. VIII. the two Sir Anthony Brownes (father and ſon)—and the KING's *Great Standard* would hardly be conſigned to the care of the *Clerk* of the *Cheque* of the *Yeomen* of the *Guard*. From whence Dr. Chamberlayne took his information I cannot perceive; but on a nearer examination it might originate from a paſſable error, ariſing from ignorance or inatttention, and in ſuch caſe the ſubordinate *Standard* has the appearance of carrying the Armorial Bearing of one of the *Captains* of the Band, whom I take to have been the ſecond Sir *Anthony Browne*, and who will appear to have ſucceeded the *Earl* of *Eſſex* in the command. The Arms of Sir Anthony were (as now borne by his deſcendant Viſcount Montacute) "Sable, three Lions paſſant "in Bend, between two double Cotiſes, Argent." On which I would remark, that, the Lions being overlooked by an unſkilful obſerver, the two double Cotiſes in the Blazon have tranſiently the appearance of four Bends.

"whoſoever

" whoſoever had well viewed them might have ſaid, that they,
" for tall and comely perſonages, and clean of limb and body,
" were able to give the greateſt Prince in Chriſtendom a mor-
" tal breakfaſt, if he had been the KING's enemy."

The KING advancing on horſeback, with his attendants, ſtopped when he arrived at the end of the rank of the PENSIONERS, and the interview took place, during which the " *Fifty* PENSIONERS, with the *Guard*, departed to furniſh the " Hall at Greenwich." Here accordingly we find them again when the King and his intended Queen arrived there; for, *below* the hearth in the Hall were placed the [Yeomen of the] *Guard*, and *above* the hearth " The *Fifty* PENSIONERS with " their *Battle-Axes**." From this account we may obſerve, that the *Corps* was at that time a troop, ſimilar to what we now, in the military line, call *Dragoons*; ſerving *on horſeback*, when the KING was in the Field, and other occaſions, within the Court, *on foot*. In both theſe characters we have ſeen them on the reception of the Lady Anne of Cleves—firſt, *on horſe-back* at Blackheath, and immediately afterwards *on foot* in the Hall at the Palace of Greenwich.

Soon after this period, ſome latitude was given to the *Band*, in point of attendance, and it was allowed that *half* the *Band* ſhould wait *quarterly*, except on the principal Feaſts. Whether this aroſe from the ſeverity of the then duty, or to relieve the *Gentlemen* in point of expence, does not appear. The following however are the orders which iſſued after the *Earl* of *Eſſex* had

* Holingſhed. The King's Hall, by this deſcription, ſeems to have had the fire in the centre, as in the halls of colleges, inns of court, and other ſocieties.

reſigned

reſigned the command, and when Sir *Anthony Browne* was CAPTAIN of the BAND *.

" *Where*[*as*] *it hath pleaſed the* King's *Majeſty, at the ſpecial* " *ſute of* Sir Anthony Browne, *Knighte and* Captaine *of his Ma-* " *jeſty's* Gentlemen Penconers, *to graunt and enlarge his* High- " nes' *ſaid* Penconers *to the libtie of* Quarter-waiters, *by the Checke,* " *as is in an article before menconed, ſo that continually thone* " *halfe of them ſhall be attendaunt without any excuſe of ſicknes* " *or otherwiſe; but that he or they that ſhall fortune to be ſicke, or* " *have any other lett within his ſaide* Quarter, *ſhall, for the tyme* " *of his abſence, fynde one of his Companye that ſhal be oute of his* " Quarter *to waite upon the* King's Majeſty, *and to furniſhe his* " *place, or ells to be in daunger of the Check; and the other halfe* " *for the meane tyme of theire halfe yere ſo by the quarter to be* " *taken att their libertye.*

" Item, *The whole Band of the ſaid* Gentlemen Penconers, *at* " *the fower principall Feaſts of the yeare, that is to ſaye,* Chriſtmas, " Eſter, Whitſontid, Alhollontyd, *ſhall give theire attendaunce* " *under Check as they now doe.*

" Item, *In conſideracon whereof, whereas nowe they are bounden* " *to the findinge of* Twoe *Greate Horſis only, they ſhall each one,* " *from henceforthe, keepe* Three *Horſes furniſhed accordingly.*

* In what year *Henry Bourchier, Earl of Eſſex,* reſigned, is not preciſely determinable; but his death is mentioned by ſeveral hiſtorians, (particularly by Biſhop Godwin) as having taken place by a fall from an unruly horſe, 1540. The Orders which we are going to tranſcribe are a ſufficient aſcertainment that the *Earl* did not die in the *Command,* but that Sir Anthony ſucceeded him in his life-time.—*Sir John Peachy,* the firſt *Lieutenant* of the *Band,* ſeems likewiſe to have cloſed his life in an unfortunate manner; for he either died of the plague, or by a ſlow poiſon, ſuppoſed to be given to him at the banquet made at Ardres, when K. Henry VIII. and K. Francis I. had the Grand Interview, 1520. [Vid. Hall's Chron. Hen. VIII. pp. 89. 91. b] He was a Knight-Banneret, having been made ſuch, 1513. [Id. p. 33. b.]

" Item, *Notwithſtandinge this graunte of libtie they be neverthe-*
" *leſſe at all tymes in ſuche a readynes, that when warninge ſhall*
" *be given unto them from the Officers above them, they and every*
" *of them ſhall, accordinge to the ſame, repaire to the Courte, and*
" *give ſuche attendaunce for the tyme as ſhall be appointed unto*
" *them uſinge for that ſeaſone, be it in theire* Quarter *or other-*
" *wiſe, no leſſe deligence then they doe at the preſent, as apptayn-*
" *ethe* *."

We have but very tranſient views of the *Band* in this reign after the period laſt mentioned, except that the *Gentlemen* ſeem to have attended the KING on all occaſions, in the military as well as the civil line. Thus, according to Lord Herbert, they eſcorted his Majeſty at his Grand Entrée into *Boulogne*, after it was taken (1544), with the *Earl of Eſſex* at their head †. Another writer, Strype [Memorials, Vol. II. p. 115] likewiſe tells us that they were with the King at the ſiege of that city, to the number of *Two Handred*, including a retinue of *Three* to each PENSIONER, all mounted " on barded ‡ horſes, in one

" Suit

* Bibl. Harl. N. 6142.

† William Parr, Earl of Eſſex, afterwards Marquis of Northampton, who, it is preſumable, ſucceeded Sir Anthony Browne in the command, when he was made Maſter of the Horſe, 1540. This new Earl of Eſſex was in very high eſtimation with the King, who had married his ſiſter, ſtrengthened by the Earl's own marriage with his Majeſty's ſecond couſin, the ſole daughter and heireſs of Henry Bourchier, late Earl of Eſſex.

‡ By *Barded* horſes, I underſtand horſes fully *armed*, on their Faces, Manes, and Cheſts, and otherwiſe *capariſoned*, from the French Verb *Barder*, which, according to the gloſſariſts, ſignifies to accoutre a War-Horſe. [See Cotgrave, Richlet, &c.] Pieces of this ſort of Armour are ſtill to be ſeen in the Tower of London. The words *Barded* and *Barbed* are often uſed as ſynonymous terms, though they, perhaps, have their diſtinctions:—Thus, in a Diary of the Siege of Boulogne, written at the time. [Vid. Rymer's Fœdera, Tom. XV.]

the

" Suit of *Red* and *Yellow* Damaſk, the Bards of their horſes, and " Plumes of Feathers, being of the ſame colours*."

We are now brought, Sir, very near to the demiſe of the *Inſtitutor* of the BAND; but I cannot diſmiſs this reign without troubling you with a Liſt of the GENTLEMEN (as it ſtood at the time when the Eltham Statutes were made, in the year 1526), the major part of whom were probably the original appointees. In this roll will be found the names of many reſpectable perſons, who either were Cadets of Families then of conſiderable account, or were themſelves the Heads of Families afterwards *ennobled.*

A Liſt of the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, as found in the Statutes made at *Eltham*, in the 17th year of King Henry VIII. A. D. 1526†, viz.

Sir Humphrey Ratcliff,	*Edmund Brydges*,
Thomas Aſtley,	*Edward Earle*,
Thomas Avery,	*Edmund Horne*,
Thomas Butler,	*Edmund Harvey*,
Thomas Palmer,	*William Fullwood*,
Henry Jerningham	*Edward Grimſton*,
Henry Markham,	*Edward Vaughan*,
Edward Haſtings,	*Humphrey Coniſby*,

the horſes of the principal nobility attending the King on his departure from Calais, are deſcribed to have been " *Barbed* with Cloth of Gold." The repreſentation of a Horſe thus capariſoned, both *barded* and *barbed* (if there is a difference), may be ſeen in one of the plates of the Maneige Royal de Monſ. de Pluvinel, printed at Paris, 1623.

* *Red* and *Yellow* are the true Royal Colours; but *Red* and *Blue*, though they have been long adopted, I apprehend, (if I may be allowed the liberty of the remark) are ſubject to the charge of falſe Heraldry. Many other combinations of colours in Regimentals are liable to the ſame imputation—but diſtinction has rendered them neceſſary.

† Tranſcribed from a copy in the Lord Chamberlain's Office.

John Wingfield,
John Greſham,
John Portmary
John Banniſter
John Paſton,
Jaques Granado,
John Sandes,
Robert Long,
Richard Tyrrell,
William Blunt,
William Palmer,
William Keylwey,
William Skipwith,
William Ellerker,
William Bonham,
Walter Bonham,
William Francis,
William Betts,
Francis Knowlys,
Gawen Carey,
George Pollard,
Giles Poole,
Anthony Digby,
John Conway,
Chriſtopher Sackville,
Chriſtopher Litcott,
Charles Herbert,
Nicholas Wadham,
Peter Carew,
Simon Digby,
Stephen Adams,
Francis Hacke,
Robert Stafford,
Nicholas Arnold, 46*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* each,

CLK. OF THE CHEQUE, [*William Birch,*]	40 *Pounds*
HARBINGER, [*John More,*]	18 *Pounds*
The CAPTAIN,	200 *Marks*
The LIEUTENANT,	100 *Pounds*
The STANDARD-BEARER,	100 *Marks*

It would be a fruitleſs labour to attempt to preſerve ſucceſſional liſts of the *Gentlemen* of the *Band*, or of the *ſubaltern Officers*; but the names and titles of ſuch of the CAPTAINS, as I have been able to collect with authority, are inſerted in the Appendix N° I.

In

In the Reign of K. EDWARD THE SIXTH, Sir, we find frequent and familiar mention of the *Band*, even by the King himſelf, in his Journal. The firſt appearance of the PENSIONERS was, as it is natural to ſuppoſe, in proceſſion from the Tower to Weſtminſter, on the day preceding the Coronation, when "The PENSIONERS and *Men* of *Armes*, with their *Pole-Axes*, "went on either ſide the way on foote*." By this arrangement they were placed longitudinally, at proper diſtances, ſo that, as appears from the ceremonial, the King was as nearly as might be in the centre of his BAND of PENSIONERS. On the day of the Coronation the King landed in the morning at the Privy Stairs, where again we find the "PENSIONERS apparelled all "in *red Damaſke*, with their *Pole-Axes* in their hands:" and in the Proceſſion to the Abbey they followed the Peers in the rear, immediately before the *Yeomen* of the *Guard* †.

In this and the following Reign, though both of them were ſo ſhort, we ſhall find the BAND in an active line at home, and not immaterially concerned in times of inquietude, when the Sovereign was alarmed by impending danger. The next View we have of it is in a Grand Muſter of all the *Bands* retained in the King's ſervice, which I ſhall preſently give at large, partly from the KING's Journal, but principally from a more enlarged account, once in the Cottonian Library ‡.

It was the cuſtom of thoſe times for moſt of the Great Officers to have *Bands* of *Men of Arms*, horſed, and in Armour, who occaſionally muſtered before the King, together with the

* Leland's Collectanea, Vol. IV. p. 312.

† Idem, pp. 322. 324.

‡ Vitellius, F. 5. printed in Strype's Memorials, Vol. II. p. 290. [The MS. was deſtroyed by the fire, and therefore this preſervation is of more value.] The King's Journal is printed in Biſhop Burnet's Hiſtory of the Reformation, Vol. II. The *Autograph* may be ſeen in the Cottonian Library. Nero. C. X.

BAND

BAND of PENSIONERS. The KING's *Band* muſtered under the Royal Banner *, and the reſt under the Banner of their reſpective Commanders. Theſe the King calls in his Journal *Gendarmes*, when he ſpeaks of them ſeparately; and collectively, the *Gendarmerie*. The general Muſter I have mentioned took place in the year 1551, of which the following account is given by Strype †.

" The KING was now minded to ſee his ſtanding Forces, " Horſe and Foot, muſter before him; and the rather that he " might be in a readineſs in caſe any Riſing might happen, as " was apprehended by the diſcontented Duke of Somerſet and " his party. So there were letters written and directed to cer- " tain of the Chief Officers of the Army to have the *Gendar- " mory* and *Bands* of *Horſemen*, which were appointed there in " a readineſs to be ſeen by his Majeſty. And a letter was diſ- " patched to the *Marquis* of *Northampton*, CAPTAIN of the " BAND of PENSIONERS, to have the Band appointed him in " a readineſs with ALL the PENSIONERS and *Men of Arms* " attending on the Court.

" In Hyde Park was then a great Muſter in the KING's Pre- " ſence after this manner. Firſt came the KING's Trum- " peters—Then,

* In a MS. account of the Payments made to ſundry Officers of Houſhold in the 6th year of K. Edw. VI. I meet with a *Standard-Bearer* with a Salary of 100*l.* per annum, and a *Banner-Bearer*, with 40*l.* per annum. The like Officers are found in the eſtabliſhment of K. James I. in Off. Arm.

† Memorials, V. II. p. 284. It is mentioned in Stowe's Chronicle, as is another Muſter in the year following; wherein, by the way, he gives the number of Penſioners at 150, meaning, no doubt, to include their Retinue, for he deſcribes each Penſioner as having two Great Horſes and a Gelding.

" The LORD BRAY, in gilt Harneſs, CAPTAIN of the " PENSIONERS and a *Great Banner* of the KING's *Arms**.— " Then,

" ALL the PENSIONERS *in complete Harneſs*, and great ar- " ray in *White* and *Black*, five and five in a Rank; and after " them came their ſervants, in number *an Hundred*, with " *Great Horſes* and *Harneſs*, in *White* and *Black*, with *Spears*.

" The ſecond Company was led by,

" The LORD TREASURER [1], being *an Hundred Men of* " *Arms*, with broidered Coats, Red and White, with Spears: " his Standard a Falcon of Gold.

" The third Company belonged to

" The DUKE of NORTHUMBERLAND [2], being *an Hundred* " *Men of Arms*, in Velvet Embroidery, with Trumpeters: " his Standard a Lion crowned and ragged [raguled] Staff.

" The fourth Captain was,

" The LORD MARQUIS of NORTHAMPTON [3], with *an Hun-* " *dred Men of Arms*, in Yellow and Black; Spears, Penſils, " and Trumpeters: his Standard the Maiden's Head.

" The

* He ſhould rather be called *Commander* of the *Penſioners*, as being only LIEUTENANT of the *Band:* for it has appeared that the MARQUIS of NORTHAMPTON was the CAPTAIN, though, on this occaſion, he muſtered as LORD HIGH CHAMBERLAIN with *an Hundred Men of Arms* in Yellow and Black (his armorial Colours) under his own ſtandard. The Command of the *Penſioners* therefore devolved upon the Lieutenant Lord *Bray*.

[1] *William Pawlet*, Marquis of Wincheſter. [Dugd. Bar.]

[2] *John Dudley*, Lord High Admiral, Steward of the Houſhold, &c. [Dugd. Bar.]

[3] *William Parr*, Lord High Chamberlain, &c. The fortunes of this Noble-

man

" The fifth [was]

" The EARL of BEDFORD [4], with *an Hundred Men of Arms* " in Red and White; his Standard a Goat, White: a Trum- " peter, Penſils, and Spears.

" The ſixth [was]

" The EARL of RUTLAND [5], with *an Hundred Men of* " *Arms*, in Yellow and Blue; his Standard a Peacock, and Pen- " ſils.

man were ſingularly unequal. From a private gentleman he had ariſen to uncommon honours, by virtue of his ſiſter's marriage with King Henry the Eighth. His firſt Office was no greater than that of an Eſquire of the Body to King Henry: he was afterwards created Baron Parr, and Earl of Eſſex, (as we have ſeen him at the ſiege of Boulogne) and elected a Knight of the Garter. In the firſt year of King Edward the Sixth, we find him Marquis of Northampton, *Captain* of the *Band of Penſioners*; and in the King's fourth year Lord Great Chamberlain (for life) on the ſurrender of the Earl of Warwick. [Dugdale's Baronage.] Theſe accumulatad Honours and Offices did not laſt long; for on the King's demiſe, his Lordſhip unfortunately eſpouſing the claim of Lady Jane Grey, jointly with the Duke of Northumberland, in oppoſition to Queen Mary, was attainted; deprived of all his Offices, and his Eſtate; degraded from the Order of the Garter; and reduced to the humble rank of William Parr, Eſq. Notwithſtanding all theſe deprivations, he was reſtored in b'ood by Queen Mary, and by Queen Elizabeth re-created into his former Honours; re-elected a Knight of the Garter, and inſtalled a ſecond time. A. D. 1559. [Anſtis's Regiſter of the Garter.]

[4] *John Ruſſel*, Keeper of the Privy-Seal. [Godwin's Annals, and the King's Journal.]

[5] *Henry Manners*, Warden of the Eaſt and Middle Marches towards Scotland. [Dugd. Bar.]

" The

" The Seventh [was]

" The EARL of HUNTINGDON [6], with *Fifty Men of Armes*, " in Blue; Spears, Standard, and Penſils: his Standard a " Manche.

" The eighth [was]

" The EARL of PEMBROKE [7], *an Hundred Men of Armes*: " his Standard the Green Dragon.

" The ninth [was]

" The LORD COBHAM [8], with *Fifty Men of Armes*, in Black " and White: his Standard the Saracen's Head.

" The tenth [was]

" The LORD CHAMBERLAIN [9], with *Fifty Men of Armes*, " Coats of White and Red, and Spears: their Coats in Broi- " dery, Penſils, his Standard the Maiden's Body.

" The eleventh [was]

" Mr. TREASURER CHEYNEY [10], with *an Hundred Men of*

[6] *Francis Haſtings* (ſecond Earl of Huntingdon), a Privy Counſellor and Knight of the Garter. He was employed in a military character in the 4th of Edw. VI. againſt the French. [Dugdale's Bar.] I do not obſerve that he had then any great poſt at home.

[7] *William Herbert*, Maſter of the Horſe. [Dugdale's Bar.]

[8] *George Brooke*, Lord *Cobham*. [Dugdale's Bar.] He does not appear to have then had any Office of importance.

[9] *Thomas D'Arcy*, Lord *D'Arcy*, of Chiche. [King Edward's Journal, ſub anno 1550. Vid. alſo, Anſtis's Reg. of the Garter.] Dugdale does not mention him as Lord Chamberlain.

[10] *Sir Thomas Cheyney*, Knight of the Garter, Treaſurer of the Houſhold. " [Dugdale's Bar.]

" *Armes*, all Black, Spears, and Penſils, beſides *Coſtrels*: His " Standard the Roſe in the Sun *."

The King, Sir, ſeems to have received much ſatisfaction from the appearance made by his BAND of PENSIONERS and their Retinue on this occaſion; for, to give you his own words, he deſcribes them to have been " well armed men; ſome with *Fea-* " *thers*, *Staves* and *Penſils* of their Colours; ſome with Sleeves " and Half Coats; ſome with Bards and Staves, &c." This want of uniformity may rather ſtrike us at preſent, though I preſume it was an immaterial circumſtance at the time. The King then adds, that " the horſes [were] all fair and great, the worſt " would not have been given for leſs than *Twenty Pounds*: there " was [were] none under fourteen handfull and a half the moſt " part, and almoſt all the Horſes with their *Guider* † going be-

* There is ſome variation in the numbers as ſummarily mentioned in the King's Journal, and the Earl of Bedford is omitted. Though I have termed the BAND of PENSIONERS *demi-military*, yet we may obſerve, from the Rank the GENTLEMEN here held among the ſtanding forces, that they were conſidered as the prime of the army. So P. Daniel, ſpeaking of *The Hundred Gentlemen* (the *Becs de Corbin*) ſays—" Ils etoient le principal corps de l'Armée." [De la Milice Françoiſe, II. p. 107.]

† *Great Horſes* were at that time called *Dexters*, from the French *Deſtriers*, being led to the field by a ſervant (the *Guider*) with his *Right Hand*. [Vid. Memoires ſur l'ancienne Chevalerie, par Monſ. de Ste. Palaye, tom. I. p. 21.] His words are, ſpeaking of War-horſes, that they were led—" Par des Ecuyers qui " les tenoient à leur *droite* d'ou on les a appellés *Deſtriers*:" But the expreſſion is ſtill more explicit in a note on this paſſage, where it is ſaid, the Eſquire who led the Knight's horſe—" Menoit ſon *Deſtrier* en *Deſtre*." In more modern accounts (of the laſt century, for inſtance) I find them called *Chevaux de Main*, and the leaders ſtyled *Palfreniers*. [Vid. Couſes de Teſtes et de Bague, Paris, 1670.] The Latin word is *Dextrarii*.

" fore

" fore them. They paſſed twice about St. James's Field, and " compaſſed it round and ſo departed *."

Theſe Muſters had their uſe in home-ſervice occaſionally, in defending marches, oppoſing inſurrections, &c. and the prime Nobility were thereby inured to the exerciſe of Arms. Sometimes the *Bands* performed mock fights and ſieges, of which the King, in his Journal, mentions one in his ſecond year, where thirty Gentlemen defended a fortreſs at Greenwich againſt an hundred aſſailants. Beſides theſe, juſts and tournaments, running, ſhooting, &c. were in frequent uſe, wherein this young and active Monarch (who may in his time be properly ſtyled *Princeps Juventutis*) bore a part, as he tells us himſelf. " A Challenge," ſays the KING †, " was made by *Me*, that *I*, " with Sixteen of my Chamber, ſhould *Run at Baſe* ‡, *Shoot*, " and *Run at the Ring* §, with any Seventeen of my *Servants*, " GENTLEMEN in the Court." Among thoſe who entered the Liſts againſt the King, it is natural to ſuppoſe there would be ſeveral of the younger and moſt active of the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, as men trained to athletic Exerciſes, glad to ſignalize themſelves, and provoke the KING's notice in ſuch honourable encounters. Stowe

* Journal. What was then *St. James's Field* is now *Pall-Mall*, the adjacent ſtreets, &c. [See a View of *St. James's Palace* and *Weſtminſter Abbey*, from the Village of *Charing*, engraved from a drawing of Hollar, in the Antiquarian Repertory, Vol. I. facing p. 197.] It is worth remarking, that there was ſo little connection between the *City of London* and *this Village*, in the reign of King Henry VIII. that an Act of Parliament was made, 1533, to mend the road between the *Strand-Croſs* (where the New-Church now ſtands) and *Charing-Croſs*, it having become almoſt impaſſable. This act is printed in Raſtall's Statutes.

† Journal.

‡ This Diverſion, by ſome called *Priſon-Baſe*, and by others *Priſon-Bars*, is ſtill known in ſeveral parts of England.

§ I muſt here, Sir, beg leave to trouble you with a long Note. As few traces of this old diverſion of *Running at the Ring* now remain, I take the liberty of

Stowe mentions another Muſter made at Greenwich, in the laſt year of the King's reign, to which the Journal does not extend,

drawing together what has occurred to me on the ſubject. The practice is held not to be very ancient, and indeed, from the little comparative exertion required, ſeems rather to have ſucceeded Tilts and Tournaments, after the rage for perſonal engagements was worn out. It is, however, old enough to be almoſt forgotten.

A French Writer (Monſieur de Pluvinel *) is of opinion that it was firſt adopted by officers of the Cavalry when in garriſon, or when unemployed; by which means they preſerved their horſes in exerciſe, and themſelves in the uſe and management of the Lance. The party, in order to retain every branch of diſcipline, was armed at all points.—The horſe was put to his full ſpeed, and the ring was of a very ſmall diameter, and, according to Mr. de Pluvinel it was no larger than a man's eye †. Its poſition will be deſcribed preſently. Gallantry, as in Tournaments, was generally the encouragement to this exerciſe; for our author tells us, it was uſual for a *Lady* to give a *Ring* of value to be contended for by the candidates, which ſhe beſtowed on the winner with her own hand, and ſuch reward has been perſonally conferred by *Queens* themſelves. Public ſolemnities of various ſorts were the occaſions when the practice was exhibited, attended with much parade, and it ſeems to have continued in uſe till the end of the 16th and the beginning of the 17th century, after which it vaniſhed both in England and in France; though I have authority to ſay, it is uſed at this day, by the Gentry, in ſeveral parts of Germany.

To have a nearer view of the poſition of the *Ring*, and the mode of *Running at it*, we muſt advert to ſome of the plates in Mr. de Pluvinel's work, where the *Ring* is repreſented as pendent from a kind of gibbet, being ſuſpended from the horizontal beam by a ſpring which yielded to the touch, ſo as not to endanger the repulſe of the horſeman in his career. The ſpecies of Lance made uſe of appears to have been adapted to the purpoſe, being ſo ſlender as to receive the Ring with eaſe, and nearly as taper at the point as a ſmall ſword. There is a plate likewiſe on an inferior ſcale, which ſhews the poſition of the Ring, and the attitudes of the parties, to be ſeen (though without any deſcription) in a ſmall folio, intitled, "Militarie Inſtructions for the Cavalrie, by J. C. printed at Cambridge,

* Firſt Equerry and Riding-Maſter to Louis XIII. and who publiſhed a work on Horſemanſhip, with Plates, intitled, Le Maneige Royal. [Paris, 1623].

† From the drawing given by Mr. de Pluvinel, it appears however to have a diameter of two inches at leaſt.

tend, where the *Captain* of the *Penſioners* (the Marquis of Northampton) muſtered again as High Chamberlain; and the

" bridge, 1632." [Page 36]. One of the horſemen there repreſented (of which there are three) is running to take up a *Glove* from the ground on the point of his Spear, which will explain what occurs preſently. The Glove, I preſume, was thrown down by a Lady.

There was a magnificent *Running at the Ring* held at Paris, by Louis XIV. (1662), but nothing is to be diſcerned from it for our ſatisfaction, except that the QUEEN herſelf delivered the Reward, *a Diamond Ring*, to the Winner, the principal objects for our preſent obſervations being obſcured by the multiplicity of Figures in the Plate *.

As to the rules generally adhered to in this exerciſe, I have found them no where except in a very obſcure pamphlet now before me, containing the ceremonial of the Baptiſm of Henry Prince of Wales, performed at Edinburgh, A. D. 1594, and of the public entertainments conſequent upon it †. I give the words as I find them.

" Every lackie carrying in his hand his Maiſter's Launce, they began their " paſtime by *Running* at the *Ring* and *Glove* ‡; the Laws whereof were theſe:

" 1. That all the perſons of this paſtime compeare maſked, and in ſuch Order as " they come into the Field, ſo to run out all their courſes.

" 2. That none uſe any other *Ring* but that which is put up: and uſe no other " Launce but that which they have brought for themſelves.

" 3. He that *twice* touches the *Ring*, or ſtirs it, winneth as muche [as] if he " carried away the Ring ||.

" 4. He that lets his Launce fall out of his hand is deprived of all the reſt of his " courſes.

* The account of this Ceremonial, for ſo it may be called, with very fine Engravings, was publiſhed at Paris, 1670, of which there is a good impreſſion in the Britiſh Muſeum.

† This account was firſt printed at London, 1603, (Duodecimo) and afterwards reprinted at Edinburgh, 1687. Dr. Birch ſeems to have been ignorant of this publication.

‡ See above.

|| This ſeems to have been either a previous article by conſent, or conformable to the cuſtom of the country, as, in the account given by King Edward, it did not reckon; for we are told in the Journal, that his Majeſty's party touched the Ring often, " which was counted as nothing."

5. That

the Lord Bray (the *Lieutenant*) had the command of the *Penſioners*. Other ſimilar matters occur in different authors, not worth inſiſting upon.

Theſe private Companies of *Band-Men*, as the King calls them, ſeem to have been, for the moſt part, provided for, in point of expence, by the King; though the men were to be found by the Captain, and evidently were diſpoſed of according to his Majeſty's pleaſure. Thus, from the King's Journal, it appears, that the Band which the Duke of Somerſet had, was, after his attainder, appointed to the Duke of Suffolk. The Duke of Northumberland having under him an Hundred Men of Arms, and an Hundred Light Horſe, reſigned Fifty Men of

" 5. That every one run with looſe reins, and with as much ſpeed as his horſe " hath.

" 6. That none after his Race, in up-taking of his Horſe, lay his Launce upon " his ſhoulder, under the pain of loſſe of that which he hath done in his " courſe.

" 7. He that carrieth not his Launce under his arme, loſeth his courſe.

" 8. That none, until his *three* courſes be ended, chaunge his horſe, if he be " not hurt, or upon ſome other conſideration moved to chaunge him."

The reſult on this occaſion was, that, " Proof being made, the Victory fell to " the Duke of Lennox, who bringing it [the Ring I preſume] to his Side and " Partie, had the Praiſe and Prize adjudged to himſelf." The Reward is deſcribed to have been " a fair and rich *Ring* of *Diamonds*," given by the QUEEN.

I finiſh this Note by obſerving, from King Edward's account, how difficult it was to carry the Prize; for his Majeſty tells us, that in *One Hundred* and *Twenty* Courſes the *Ring* was taken but *Three* times *.

* See the King's Journal, p. 26.

Arms

Arms to his ſon the Earl of Warwick *. Again, when the Earl of Pembroke quitted the office of Maſter of the Horſe, he likewiſe gave up Fifty of his Men of Arms, as being a command under the King, which were equally divided between Sir Philip Hobbey and Sir John Gates †: the reſt the Earl kept, as being his own licenced retainers ‡.

As the formation of theſe bodies was at the pleaſure of the King, by letters from the Council-Board, ſo was their diſſolution. The King tells us, in his Journal, that it was agreed (in Council, I preſume, from whence every public act, excluſive of the Parliament, iſſued) that "the Bands of Men of Arms "appointed to Mr. Sidney, Mr. Vice-Chamberlain [Sir John

* Journal. † Journal.

‡ Though the raiſing theſe Bands lay upon their Captains reſpectively; yet the Pay for them did not commence till the Corps was completed. Thus it appears in the 21ſt year of King Henry VI. that ſome Lord (not mentioned by name), who had deſired to have wages advanced to him before he made his Muſter, was anſwered by the Privy Council, that "In the King's time that dead is, neither my Lord of Bedford §, neither my Lord of Glouceſter § never begun "of their wages for them of their retinues, unto [untill] the time that they "had made their whole muſters." We may obſerve how rigid the Council was in this reſpect from what follows, viz.—"and my Lord of Glouceſter, for lack of "*two* Spears of his retinue, was not allowed." [Bibl. Harl. No. 81.] In theſe common Bands, as they were ſtyled, great abuſes were found in the reign of King Edward VI. [Strype's Memorials, Vol. II. p. 148.] As to what we now call *Regiments*, they ſeem to have been adopted by us from France, where they were firſt eſtabliſhed in the Reign of Charles the Ninth, about the year 1569, [Pere Daniel, Hiſt. de France]. The French herein probably followed the Spaniards, for the term is Spaniſh—*Regimiento*.

§ Both of them Brothers to King Henry V.

"Gates],

" Gates], Mr. Hobbey, and Mr. Sadler, ſhould not be fur-
" niſhed, but leſt off*."

That theſe Bands were profitable as well as honourable to the Captain, is teſtified by Sir Robert Cary (afterwards Earl of Monmouth) who had a command upon the Middle March of Scotland under Queen Elizabeth, and laments, that on the acceſſion of King James, he loſt the Pay of Forty Horſe which the Queen had given him. Theſe Horſemen he had before deſcribed to be for the moſt part the Servants of his Houſhold, which, to uſe his own words, were " Gentlemens Sons in the " country, and Younger Brothers of good Rank †."

In the higher Line, of which we have been ſpeaking, the Men of Arms were proportionably of greater Quality, viz. the Younger Sons of the Nobility, of Bannerets, &c. It was at this period an honour and no indignity for the young Nobility to be enrolled under another gallant Commander, though of inferior rank; and we are told that when King Henry VIII. had acquired reputation in his firſt war, and took the part of Spain againſt Louis XII. King of France, the Emperor Maximilian I. did not diſdain to ſerve under the King ‡. To return,

Sir,

* Journal. Mr. or *Maſter* was, at that time, often applied to *Knights* as well as *Gentlemen*; for hereby are meant Sir Henry Sidney—Sir Philip Hobbey—and Sir Ralph Sadler, the laſt of whom was at that time a Knight-Banneret, as appears from the preceding part of the King's Journal.

† Memoirs, p. 113. From hence it ſhould ſeem that theſe Cadets were merely expectants, and ſerved without pay. Sir Robert farther inſinuates that the diſcharge of this Troop would be no inconſiderable ſaving to the Crown. In fact, there was no occaſion for ſuch Forces on the Marches, after the Union of the Two Crowns.

‡ Burnet's Hiſtory of the Reformation. The Emperor and all his Band wore the *Croſs* of *St George* and the *Union Roſe* on their breaſts. [Vid. Mich. Drayton's

Sir, to the KING's *Band* of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. We have juſt now ſeen them drawn out among the *Gendarmerie*, and in the Field under the KING's *Banner*, and had it not been for the timely diſcovery of the Duke of Somerſet's Conſpiracy we ſhould have found them in action; for it was one part of Somerſet's traiterous intentions to have attacked the whole *Gendarmerie*, on a Muſter-day, with two thouſand Footmen belonging to Sir Henry Vane, and with an Hundred of his own Horſemen, beſides others in his intereſt, who were to have at firſt appeared in the Field as ſimple ſpectators of the Muſter. This was confeſſed by Sir Thomas Palmer, one of the Conſpirators *. The intention was bloody; for the King ſays, "the "Duke intended no quarter, and that all the Horſe of the *Gen-* "*darmerie* were to have been ſlain †." Sir Henry Vane's part in this intended maſſacre very deſervedly coſt him his life.

We will now, Sir, revert to the BAND in a more quiet hour. When the Q. Dowager of Scotland, paſſing from France thither (1550) was driven by a ſtorm into Portſmouth, and had determined to proceed by land, ſhe took the opportunity of viſiting King Edward, and was received at Hampton-Court by many of the Nobility of both ſexes, and by all the PENSIONERS with their CAPTAIN and LIEUTENANT. At her departure ſhe was likewiſe eſcorted to the extremity of the City of London by the PENSIONERS among many others, and was there received by the Gentlemen of the county of Middleſex ‡.

The

Heroical Epiſtles, fol. 81. b.]—The Emperor was, indeed, a Knight of the Garter:—but the compliment lay in his wearing the *latter* Badge in addition to the *former*, and obliging his men to wear them *both*.

* Journal.

† Journal.

‡ Journal. The *Band* was likewiſe occaſionally employed in *Receptions* of Perſons inferior to Royalty; for antecedent to this (1549) when the Count d'An-

The next occaſion, Sir, when we ſee the *Band*, is in a progreſs made by the KING, in the year 1551, when we learn from his Majeſty's Journal, that on the 16th of May, a Muſter was made of all the *Men of Arms* (with ſome exceptions) and alſo of all the PENSIONERS, for the purpoſe of draughting a certain number out of each Band for an Eſcorte. The progreſs was long, and took up more than two months. The King tells us what number of each Band was appointed to attend him: but as no draught was made out of the KING's own *Band* (the PENSIONERS) it is preſumable the whole went on that ſervice. The King, however, had not been out a month before it was neceſſary to leſſen his train, and it was accordingly reduced to an Hundred and Fifty men, picked out of all the Bands. The King eſtimates the Retinue to have conſiſted of near Four Thouſand Horſe, which, ſays he, "were "enough to eat up the country, for there was little meadow "or hay all the way as I went*." This, Sir, is the laſt view of them, as far ar I can diſcern, during this Reign, by which, however, we find they had encreaſed in the number of their attendants by the King's account: and Stowe likewiſe informs us that they had each of them *Two Great Horſes* and a *Gelding*; whereas, when we laſt ſaw them in the late Reign, each *Penſioner* had only *two* Great Horſes, or optionally *one Great Horſe* and a *Gelding* †. During the greater part of this Reign *William Parr, Marquis of Northampton* appears, from the King's Journal, to have been CAPTAIN of the BAND; and from a MS. liſt of Queen Mary's Houſhold in the Library of your Society, I

guien, and others of the French Nobility, arrived in England, they were received at Black-Heath by Lords deputed by the King, and among the reſt by Lord Bray, at the head of the *Penſioners*. [Journal.]

* Journal.

† Stowe's Chronicle.

obſerve

obſerve, he held it till his attainder, which took place in a few weeks after the Queen's acceſſion: but whether he reſumed the command after he was reſtored in blood, and re-eſtabliſhed in his honours, I do not learn *.

We have already ſeen that the *Marquis of Northampton*, though he was CAPTAIN of the GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, had another *Band* allotted to him, as *Lord Great* (or *High*) *Chamberlain*, in favour of which laſt, (for ſo I interpret what follows, and not as extending indiſcriminately to all the Band-men, who were very numerous) his Lordſhip procured this Order of Council.

"*In Council* at Greenwich, May 11, 1550.

"Upon motion made by the *Lord Great Chamberlain*, it was "agreed, that from henceforth the *Gentlemen at Arms* ſhould "be placed ſucceſſively in the PENSIONERS rooms at every "avoidance, and ſo give attendance on his *Lordſhip* as their "CAPTAIN †."

The arrangement of the BAND, Sir, in QUEEN MARY's Reign differed very little from what it had been in her brother's, except that I find, from the above MS. that the CAPTAIN, *(William Parr, Marquis of Northampton)* had a *Table*, at which it is probable the LIEUTENANT, *(Lord Bray)* and the STANDARD-BEARER *(Sir William Stafford)* dined ‡. In the next

* The Queen acceded to the Throne, July 6, 1553.—The Marquis was committed to the Tower July 26, and tried Auguſt 18. He died 1571.

† Regiſter Books of the Council-Office.

‡ Theſe appear to have been the *Officers* belonging to the *Band* in the laſt mentioned manuſcript. The names of the *Gentlemen* are there likewiſe given, which it is not neceſſary to repeat. Many occur that we have ſeen in the year 1526: but as this Roll was made immediatcly on the Queen's Acceſſion, it may rather be conſidered as a liſt of K. Edward's *Band* than of her own. What changes might

next Reign we ſhall find *Tables*, not only for the *Officers*, but for ſuch of the PENSIONERS as were upon duty; for we have already ſeen they now waited *Quarterly* in equal diviſions of half the *Band* at a time.

The number at this period was the ſame as it had thitherto been—viz. *Fifty*; of whom the Three firſt were Knights *. The Pay of the OFFICERS does not appear from the preceding Roll; but the Stipend of the PENSIONERS was 46*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* each, except that one of them (Thomas Aſtley) had an allowance of 100 Marks, (66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*) for which no ſatisfactory reaſon occurs.

To proceed chronologically—The firſt View we have of the *Band* in this Reign, when upon duty, is in an account of the QUEEN's Proceſſion from the Tower to Weſtminſter, on the day preceding the Coronation (a cuſtomary previous part of the ſolemnity in thoſe times) left by an Italian anonymous writer, cited by Mr. Gough in his Edition of Perlin's Deſcription of England, in the preface—"On each ſide of the proceſſion," he tells us, "went both the *Gentlemen of the Axe* and the *Archers*, to "the number of 300 †."

But the moſt conſpicuous appearance the PENSIONERS made in this Reign, and indeed (if I may ſay it without offence) at any other period, was in the ſame year (1553), when they were of real and eſſential uſe as a military body; for on the inſurrec-

take place afterwards in this reign, on religious motives, we do not know, though it is ſcarcely probable that the QUEEN would retain any but ſuch as were firmly in the Intereſt of the Church of Rome.

* See the laſt-cited MS.

† London, 1775, Quarto, p. xiii.—This muſt paſs for a round number, given us by a foreigner, on the *ipſe dixit* of his informer; unleſs we underſtand the *Archers* to have been a part of the *Yeomen of the Guard*, armed with Bows, as in fact they were in the preceding Reigns.

tion of Sir Thomas Wyat and others, they were very active in defending the Palace of Whitehall, the particulars of which are here given on the authority of one of the *Band*, who was preſent, by name *Edward Underhill* *.

The part they took in this affair was as follows:—" The " QUEEN, and her people at the Court, were in great con- " ſternation, when Wyat was come to Southwark, with " his army, intending to enter London that way. The GEN- " TLEMEN PENSIONERS were commanded to watch *in Ar-* " *mour* that night, for the preſervation of the QUEEN's Per- " ſon; and they came up into the *Chamber of Preſence*, with " their *Pole Axes* in their hands. Whereat the *Ladies* were " very fearful; ſome lamenting, crying and wringing their " hands, and ſaid Alas! there is ſome great miſchief towards us! " we ſhall all be deſtroyed this night! What a ſight is this to " ſee the QUEEN's *Chamber* full of *armed Men!* the like was never " ſeen or heard of." The Band in their uſual *Habits de la Cour*, with their *Battle Axes*, was an object familiar to the Ladies; but the panic aroſe from ſeeing them in the ſame place *in Armour* and on ſuch an occaſion. Soon afterwards the danger encreaſed, and the Palace was beſet by a party of the rebels from Weſtminſter, and the gates cloſed. The PENSIONERS were then in the Hall, from whence they iſſued, and demanded that the gates might be opened, ſaying, " it was too much ſhame that the " gates ſhould be thus ſhut for a few rebels—the QUEEN ſhall " ſee us fell down her enemies this day before her face." The Gates were then opened; but the QUEEN—" earneſtly requeſted

* Mr. Underhill was firſt a *Man of Arms*, at the Siege of Boulogne, Temp. Hen VIII. and afterwards, for his merit, was made a *Gentleman Penſioner* by that King, in which capacity he likewiſe ſerved King Edward VI. and Queen Mary. He was of a reſpectable family, being the ſon of Thomas Underhill, of Honington, in Warwickſhire, Eſquire. [Strype's Memorials, Vol. II. p. 115.]

" that

" that they (the *Penſioners*) would not go out of her ſight," intimating that " her only truſt was in *them* for the defence of " her perſon that day."

The QUEEN was in the gallery over the gate. They then marched before the gallery window, " when ſhe ſpake unto " them, requiring them as they were *Gentlemen in whom ſhe* " *only truſted*, that they would not go from that place." There they marched up and down for the ſpace of an hour, when news was brought that Wyat was taken. " Anon after," ſays Underhill's narrative, " the Guard of PENSIONERS were all " brought into the QUEEN's Preſence, and every one kiſſed her " hand; of whom they had great thanks and large promiſes, " how good ſhe would be unto them: but few or none of us " got any thing, although ſhe was very liberal to many " others that were enemies to God's Word, as few of us " were *."

The next opportunity we have of obſerving the *Band* is on an occaſion of greater tranquillity, in the year 1556, when, on the 20th of January there was a Muſter before the Queen. " At Greenwich Park the QUEEN's PENSIONERS muſtered in " bright Harneſs, and many barbed Horſes. Every PENSIONER " had *three* Men in *Green Coats*, guarded with *White*; ſo they " rode about the Park, three in rank, upon Horſes, with Spears " in their hands, the colours *White* and *Green* †. Afore rode " Trumpeters blowing; next a *Man of Arms*, bearing a *Stan-*

* Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 89, where the above narrative is given from Fox's MSS. The Queen accounted this ſo great an eſcape, that Medals were ſtruck in remembrance of it. [Evelyn's Numiſmata, p. 92.]

† Theſe were favourite colours, and often uſed in Badges by the Houſe of Tudor. [Archaeologia, Vol. VI. p. 183.] A Green and White uniform was worn by the Lord High Admiral (Clinton) and his Captains, on the reception of the Prince of Spain. [Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 120.]

dard

" *dard* of *Red* and *Yellow*; in the *Standard* a *White* Hart *,
" and on the one ſide a *Black Eagle* with gilded Legs †. Be-
" tween Two and Three of the clock they came down and
" muſtered before the QUEEN at the Park Gate: before the
" PENSIONERS rode many Gentlemen on *Gennets* ‡ and light
" Horſes, one whereof rode upon the fineſt *Mule* || that ever
" was ſeen, and ſo they rode to and fro before her Majeſty.
" At length the QUEEN thanked them all for their pains, and
" ſo they departed; there were of the PENSIONERS Fifty and
" more, beſides their *Men of Arms*."

In the year 1557, there was a ſimilar Muſter in Hyde Park;
" The QUEEN's PENSIONERS muſtered in Hyde Park, and all
" their men in *Green* Cloth and *White* §."

In the early part of the Reign of Queen ELIZABETH, Sir, we do not meet with any material change in the BAND itſelf. The eſtabliſhment, as to the number both of *Officers* and *Penſioners*, was the ſame as it had been left by Queen Mary; but the pay of the latter ſeems to have been advanced to 50*l.* each **. Another advantageous circumſtance likewiſe occurs at ſome period in this reign, viz. Diet at a Royal Table, allowed to the *Gentlemen* in Waiting, as well as to the *Officers*, though we have no date to fix the time of its taking place, with any de-

* The *Hart* was one of the Queen's cognizances, for it appears upon a Standard borne at her funeral. [Strype's Mem. III. 466.]

† A part of King Philip's armorial Bearings, as the ſon of the Emperor Charles V.

‡ Small Spaniſh horſes. The riders were moſt probably part of the Suite of King Philip.

|| The Spaniſh Mules were at that time in great requeſt, ſo that though we have ſeen Cardinal Wolſey mounted on his *Mule* in the preceding Reign, it muſt not, I fear, be attributed to his *humility*.

§ Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 444.

** Peck's Deſiderata Curioſa, Vol. I. p. 59.

gree of preciſion. The fact itſelf is only to be collected from ſome Articles for the government of the *Band*, which will be produced preſently.

Notwithſtanding the latitude of *Quarterly-waiting*, which we have ſeen was obtained as an indulgence to the *Band*, towards the end of the reign of King Henry VIII. by Sir Anthony Browne, we find the whole body in frequent attendance on her Majeſty, both in the Court and in Progreſſes:—Thus in the year 1598, Hentzner informs us he ſaw the QUEEN go to Chapel on a Sunday (and it does not appear to have been a high feſtival) when ſhe was "guarded on each ſide by the GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, *Fifty* in number, with *gilt Battle-Axes* *." As the *whole Band* attended the QUEEN on certain occaſions, when ſhe moved in domeſtic ſtate, it cannot be ſuppoſed but that it eſcorted her in progreſſes and other ſimilar movements of the Court, as we find it did in a ſhort excurſion made by the Queen (1561) into various parts of the City of London and its adjacencies †. Again, in the year 1564, when the Queen viſited the Univerſity of Cambridge, where ſhe was entertained with literary and ſcholaſtic exerciſes, ſhe was eſcorted to a Play by "*All* the PENSIONERS on both ſides, with torch-ſtaves ‡."

* The tranſlation of Hentzner's Travels is publiſhed ſeparately from the Latin, (firſt printed together at Strawberry-Hill), in Dodſley's Fugitive Pieces. Vol. II. p. 275. Hentzner, on this occaſion, in the original, diſtinguiſhes the *Penſioners* by the Title of SATELLITES NOBILES. The MS. accounts of the Queen's Houſhold agree with this in point of number. The *Band*, upon Sundays and other days, when the King goes to Chapel, has now a reſpectable part of the Chapel appropriated to it.

† Strype's Annals. Vol. I. p. 269. 2d. Edit.

‡ Peck's Deſiderata Curioſa, Vol. II. p. 267.

The

The moſt ſplendid appearance, however, that was made by the *Band* on ſuch occaſions, ſeems to have been when the QUEEN honoured Henry Lord Hunſdon, her kinſman, and CAPTAIN of the *Band*, with a viſit at Hunſdon Houſe in Hertfordſhire, in the year 1580*. A Painting of this proceſſion, made by command of Lord Hunſdon himſelf, is preſerved, from which a Print was engraved by Vertue, and the plate, Sir, is now the property of your Society. In this Painting the GENTLEMEN *of the Band* are dreſſed uniformly in *Black* Cloaks (of the faſhion of the times) with Ruffs about their Necks, and gold Chains over their ſhoulders; the other parts of their Dreſs are of different colours, without any adherence to uniformity†. The Queen, by this appearance of the BAND, dreſſed in an outward garment of *Black*, does not ſeem to have had any regard to the colours of *Green* and *White*, for which both her father and her ſiſter had ſuch a predilection; yet perhaps we may venture to date the *Black* facings of the preſent Uniform from this reign, though I do not know that we ſhall have any op-

* The QUEEN and *Henry Lord Hunſdon* were maternally Couſins in the firſt degree, both being deſcended from the ſame Grandfather—thus:

Sir Thomas Bullen, afterwards
Earl of Wiltſhire,

Anne Bullen = K. Hen. VIII. | Mary = Wm. Carey

Q. Elizabeth. | Henry, created Lord Hunſdon.

† As the Print does not ſhew the Colours of the Habits of the *Band*, I have been favoured with theſe particulars, given from a View of the original Painting, now in the Collection of the Right Hon. Lord Digby, at Sherborne Caſtle, in Dorſetſhire.

portunity of tracing it *. Thus much, Sir, I have been able to give you, as to the civil line of eſcorte in which the Queen uſed the Band; but we find ſhe likewiſe ſometimes ſaw them in the field, as her ſiſter had done, in Muſters and martial exerciſes. In the year 1559 there was a *Tilt* performed by the *Band* before her Majeſty, at Greenwich, on which occaſion Liſts were prepared in the Park, "for the "Queen's PENSIONERS, who were to run with Spears †." Again, Sir, Stowe tells us, that on the 28th of March, 1569, "The Penſioners, well appointed in armour on horſeback, muſ- "tered before the Queen's Majeſty in Hyde Park, beſide Weſt- "minſter ‡."

Towards the cloſe of this reign it appears, from ſome Ordinances for the regulation of the BAND, that the PENSIONERS were allowed a *Quarterly-Waiting* in diviſions, ſo that only one third part of the Band (and that with ſpecial leave of the QUEEN or the OFFICERS) be abſent at a time. From theſe Articles it is evident that the GENTLEMEN (thoſe on duty at leaſt) had a *Table*, which they never appear to have had before, in common with the CAPTAIN, and others their ſuperior OFFICERS, and that it extended both to *Dinner* and *Supper*. Theſe Orders I have inſerted at large, not only to eſtabliſh this point, but to ſhew the diſcipline then practiſed in the Corps, and the *Attendance*, *Regularity*, and *Obedience* expected from it. To theſe Articles is ad-

* The Queen might now chuſe to differ as much as poſſible from Q. Mary, even in minutiæ, though ſhe temporized in them while her ſiſter was on the throne: for on Q. Mary's acceſſion, 1553, when the Princeſs Elizabeth came to the Court, her Retinue was uniformly dreſſed,—"in *Green* guarded with *White* "Velvet, Satin, Taffata, or Cloth, according to their Qualities." [Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 14. from the Cott. Lib. Vitellius, F.]

† Strype's Annals, Vol. I. p. 193. 2d Edit.

‡ Chronicle.

ded the *Oath* to be taken by the LIEUTENANT and STANDARD-BEARER in this reign. They are to be found, together with the Orders made in the time of Sir Anthony Browne, fairly copied on vellum, in the Harleian Library, [N° 6142,] ſigned by *Sir Henry Graye*, LIEUTENANT, and by another perſon (perhaps the Standard-bearer) whoſe name is written very illegibly, and with a docquet, in theſe words, "This Booke agreeth with the Booke "made in the tyme of Kynge Henry th'eight ſigned then with "the King's owne hand, which remaineth with my Lord our "CAPTAIN." By a note in another hand-writing the *Captain* is explained to have been *George* the ſecond *Lord Hunſdon*, which circumſtance will lead us nearly to the date of this promulgation; for he ſucceeded his father *Henry*, the firſt *Lord Hunſdon*, in the command of the BAND, on his deceaſe, 1596, and died himſelf in the poſt 1603, very ſoon after the acceſſion of King James.

With a tranſcript of theſe Articles, Sir, I ſhall cloſe this reign.

The ARTICLES belonging to the ſaid GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS.

1. Firſt, *Her* Highnes *pleaſure and commaundment is, that as many of the ſaid* Gentlemen Pencyoners *as be or hereafter ſhall be ordeyned and admitted, being not lycenced by her Majeſtie, the* Captaine, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-Bearer, *be in the* Queene's *Chamber of Preſence every holydaye by nyne of the clocke in the fore noone, and every working daye by tenne of the clocke, and there to give attendaunce with their* Axes, *ready to knowe what ſhall be commaunded them by the* Queene's Majeſtie, *the* Captaine, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer.

2. Item, *The ſaid* Gentlemen Pencyoners *ſayle not to bear their* Axes, *and to give attendaunce upon the* Queene's Majeſtie *every ſuche daye or dayes as her* Grace *ſhall come abroade to Morninge Prayer, the Proceſſion, or Offeringe, and from Morninge Prayer; to Evenſonge, and from Evenſonge; and to keepe the place where her* Highnes *ſhall paſſe to and fro as large as the rome will ſerve.*

3. Item, *Her* Grace's *commaundment is, That in her* Majeſtie's *progreſſe-tyme, or in any other removinge, or yf her* Highnes *doth ryde, the ſaide* Gentlemen Pencyoners *ſhall keepe ſuche places as to them ſhal be appointed by their* Captaine, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer.

4. Item, *The* Queen's *comaundment is, That aſwell in her moſte honnorable Chamber, as in all other places where her* Highnes *ſhall paſſe by them, and* att their Boarde, *they doe uſe honeſt communicacon, with ſobernes, that is to wit, without Oathes, or any Rage in talke.*

5. Item, *That all the whole* Band *of the ſaid* Gentlemen Pencyoners, *or as many of them as be reſiaunt within the Courte for the tyme, doe accompany the* Captaine, Lieutenante, *or* Standard-bearer *from their* Dyninge *or* Suppinge Place *to the* Queene's *moſte Honourable Chambers.*

6. Item, *The* Queen's *further pleaſure is, that evry of the ſaide* Gentlemen Pencyoners *ſhall, at all tymes, be obedient and conformable to all ſuche ſervice as ſhall appertaine to the* Queene's Majeſtie, *wherein ſhe ought to be ſerved by the ſaid* Gentlemen, *or by any of them, aſwell in her* Grace's *Chambers as in all other places where her pleaſure ſhalbe to be ſerved by the commaundement of ſuch as ſhall, for the tyme being, have auctoritye to commaund and appointe the ſaid* Gentlemen Pencyoners, *as all other the* Queene's *ſervaunts.*

7. Item,

7. Item, *Yf the ſaid* Gentlemen Pencyoners, *or any of them, doe faile the daies of their appearance in the place and howers before mencyoned, then the Checke to be for the firſt defaulte the loſſe of Three daies Wages, and for the ſecond defaulte the loſſe of Sixe daies Wages, and for the third defaulte the loſſe of Fifteene dayes Wages.*

8. Item, *Yf the ſaid* Gentlemen, *or any of them, faile their attendaunce the daies of the* Queene's Highnes *removinge, aſwell at the takynge of her horſe, as at her lightinge, or be abſent when her* Majeſtie *goeth to Chappell to Morning Prayre, Proceſſion, or Offeringe, and from Morninge Prayre; to Evenſonge, and from Evenſonge; then the Check to be like damages as is expreſſed in the Article above declared.*

9. Item, *The* Queene's Majeſtie's *pleaſure and commaundement is, That every of the ſaide* Gentlemen Pencyoners *ſhall have his* Axe *borne after him with a ſufficient man, the* Axe *beinge cleane and bright, aſwell in all places out of her* Grace's *Courte, as within the ſame Courte unto ſuche place or placis whereas* [*where*] *every* Gentleman Pencyoner *ought of duty to beare it himſelf, upon paine of the* Queene's Highnes *diſpleaſure.*

10. Item, *Where* [*whereas*] *the* Queenes Majeſtie's *pleaſure is, That every of the ſaid* Gentlemen *ſhall have three Monthes libertie in the Yeare of not waitinge, ſo they take that libertie by the appointment and knowledge of her* Majeſty, *the* Captaine, Lieutenante, *or* Standard-Bearer, *or of any of them: alſo when and as many of them as ſhall obtayne any ſuche lycenſe, they ſhall thereupon, ere they departe from the Courte, give acknowledgement to the* Clarke of the Checke, *or his Deputie, of the tyme and tymes of theire ſaid licenſe, with the returnes of the ſame, or elſe the ſaid licenſe to be voyde and* [*they*] *to be checked for theire abſence.*

11. Item,

11. Item, *Furthermore, her* Majeſtie's *pleaſure is, notwithſtandinge any lycence given to any of the ſaide* Gentlemen Pencyoners *by her* Grace, *the* Captaine, Lieutenante, *or* Standard-bearer, *that the ſaid* CAPTAIN, LIEUTENANT, *or* STANDARD-BEARER *doe always foreſee that there ſhall not be abſent at no tyme nor tymes above the third parte of the* Band *of the ſaide* Gentlemen Pencyoners.

12. Item, *That evry of the ſaide* Gentlemen Pencyoners *be well and ſufficiently provided and furniſhed of his* two *Great Horſes for himſelf and his ſervaunte, according to his Oathe, with Harneſs and all other habiliments to the ſame appertayninge, to be ready with the premiſſes within two daies warninge given unto them by theire* Captaine, Lieutenante, *or* Standard-bearer *upon paine of forfeiture of tenne daies Wages for the firſt defaulte, and for the ſecond defaulte to forfeit a month's Wages, and for the third offence to be clearly expulſed and put out of the Rome of a* Gentleman Penconer, *and to loſe his whole Quarter's Wages.*

13. Item, *The* Clarcke of the Check, *or ſuche his Deputie as ſhalbe thought ſufficient by the* Captaine, Lieutenant *or* Standard-bearer, *to admyt, ſhall be every daye in the* Queene's Grace's *Chamber of Preſence by nyne of the Clocke before Noone, there to receave the appearance of the ſaide* Gentlemen Penconers: *and alſo the ſaid* Clarcke, *or his Deputy, to be at all other placis where the ſaide* Gentlemen *ſhall be appoynted to give theire attendaunce upon the* Queene's Majeſtie.

14. Item, *The* Queene's *pleaſure is, That every* Gentlemen Pencyoner *ſhall pay to the* Clarcke of the Checke, *at the takinge of his Othe, Ten Shillings, which the* Clarke *oughte of dutye to have; and that is, to witte, for the givinge of every of the ſaide*

ſhide Gentlemen *his Oathe Sixe Shillings and Eight Pence, and the other three Shillings and Fower Pence is for the coppye of the ſame Oathe to them myniſtered, as aforeſaide, and of all theſe Articles to be by the ſaid* Clarke *delivered to every of the ſaide* Gentlemen Pencyoners.

The OATHE *of the* Lieutenante *and* Standard-Bearer *.

You *ſhall ſweare to be trewe and faithfull ſubjecte and ſervante unto our* Sovereigne Lady Elizabeth by the Grace of God Queene of England, Fraunce, and Ireland, Defender of the Faithe, *&c. in earth ſupreme heade of the Churches of England and Ireland, according to the limitacon of the Acte made for the ſtabliſhment of her Highnes ſucceſſion in the Crowne ymperiall of this her Realm of England and Ireland. And you ſhall truely and diligently give your attendaunce in the Rome of* Lieutenaunte [*or* Standard-bearer] *of the* Band *of her* Majeſtie's Gentlemen Pencioners. *You ſhalbe retayned to nae pſone ne pſones of no degree or condicon by Oathe, Livery, Badge, Promiſe, or otherwiſe, but only to her* Grace, *withoute her eſpecial licence; And you ſhall not hereafter heare or knowe of any thinge that ſhalbe hurteful or prejudiciall to her moſte Royall pſone, or to her Heires in forme aboveſaid, eſpecially in Treaſon, but you ſhall withſtand it to th'uttermoſte of your power, and the ſame, with all diligence to you poſſible, reveale and diſcloſe to the* Queene's Highnes, *or to your* Captaine *for the tyme being, or in his abſence to ſome of her* Majeſtie's *Privy Councell, or for wante of them to the* Lieutenante *of the ſaid* Gentlemen Pencioners, *or to ſuche other as you ſhall knowe will diſcover the ſame to her* Grace. You *ſhall be continewally furniſhed of double Horſe and Men, and provide that your ſelf and your men may be alſoe*

* Mutatis mutandis.

well

well furniſhed with Harneſſe according to your Rome, to ſerve the Queene's Majeſtie, *in tyme of neede, or otherwiſe for her* Grace's *pleaſure. You ſhall truely aud diligently to your power obſerve and keepe from this day forward all and every ſuch reaſonable Articles, Rules, and Ordinaunces as ſhall be deviſed by the* Queene's Majeſtie, *and ſet forthe, ſigned with her* Grace's *hand, for your better Uſage and Order. And all ſuche cauſes as by waye of ſecrecye and councell ſhalbe ſhewed unto you by the* Queene's Majeſtie, *the* Captaine, *or by his* Lieutenante, *you ſhall keepe ſecrete without diſcoveringe of the ſame to any perſon or perſons till you ſhall be thereunto comaunded. And alſoe you ſhall make your* Muſter *in ſuche Harneſſe and other Habilyments of Warre and uppon ſuch Horſſes as ſhalbe your owne proper goodes and noneother mans. And this you ſhall well and truely obſerve and keepe, and ſerve the* Queene's Highnes *in the ſaide Rome of her* Majeſtie's Lieutenant [*or* Standard-bearer] *ſoe helpe you* God, *and by the holy Contents of this Booke.*

The BAND, Sir, in point of ſplendor and reſpectability, ſeems to have paſſed its meridian with the Demiſe of the *Queen*, as very ſoon after that event it fell into diſ-eſteem, owing to the partialities of her ſucceſſor, which is evident from accounts of unqueſtionable authority. The ſtate of it on the KING's acceſſion cannot better appear than from the following Letter from *George Lord Hunſdon*, CAPTAIN of the PENSIONERS, addreſſed to K. JAMES, immediately on the QUEEN's death, and before her Obſequies were performed. We ſhall there find a deſcription of the BAND as it ſtood at that period, conformably with what we have before ſeen in the *Queen's* life-time; from whence, we may further diſcern that its primary intention was then adhered to in Diſcipline, Dignity, and in the *Quality* of the GENTLEMEN themſelves, as well as that its original appearance in Accoutrements, and other military Appendages was likewiſe preſerved.

A Letter from *George Lord Hunſdon* to K. JAMES, before he came to England, upon the demiſe of QUEEN ELIZABETH*.

" Moſt mighty and moſt gracious *Liege* and *Sovereign*, among " many other Honours and Duties which I do owe unto the " memory of my late deceaſed *Sovereign* this is not the leaſt, " that it pleaſed *her Majeſty* upon the deceaſe of my Lord and " Father, and who alſo enjoyed the ſame honourable office, " to grace me with the CAPTAINSHIP of her BAND of GEN- " TLEMEN PENSIONERS, which Place and Dignity I have to this " preſent enjoyed: for the further continuance whereof I hum- " bly deſire to underſtand your MAJESTY's direction, and with- " all do think it a matter agreable to my Duty and Allegiance " plainly and truly to inform your MAJESTY of the Inſtitution, " Nature, Quality, and Service of this *Honourable* BAND. They " are in all *Fifty* GENTLEMEN, beſides MYSELF, the LIEUTE- " NANT, STANDARD-BEARER, CLERK of the CHEQUE, and " GENTLEMAN HARBINGER, choſen out of the beſt and antient- " eſt Families of England, and ſome of them Sons to *Earls*, " *Barons*, *Knights*, and *Eſquires*, Men thereunto eſpecially recom- " mended for their worthyneſs and ſufficiency, without any " Stain or Taint of diſhonour, or diſparagement in Blood. *Her* " *Majeſty* and other Princes her predeceſſors have found great " uſe of their ſervice, as well in the guard and defence of their " Royal perſons, as alſo in ſundry other important employ- " ments, as well civil as military, at home and abroad; inſo- " much as it hath ſerved them always as a nurſery to breed up " *Deputies* of *Ireland*, *Ambaſſadors* into foreign parts, *Counſellors*

* This Letter is printed in ſome of Dr. Chamberlayne's Preſent-States, viz. 1737 and 1748; but I have never been able to find the Original, or any other Copy of it.

" of *State*, *Captains* of the *Guard*, *Governors* of Places, and " *Commanders* in the Wars, both by Land and Sea. Withall " I cannot omit to ſignify to your MAJESTY their Alacrity and " Affection wherewith, upon the deceaſe of *her Highneſs*, they " did embrace your MAJESTY's title and cauſe; inſomuch that, " upon my motion, they did moſt willingly offer themſelves " to a ſtrong and ſettled combination, by a ſolemn Oath and " Vow, to defend and proſecute your MAJESTY's lawful Right " and Title by themſelves, their Friends, Allies, and Follow- " ers (being no contemptible portion of this kingdom) to the " laſt drop of their Blood, againſt all impugners whatſoever; " with which humble and dutifull deſires of theirs to ſerve " your MAJESTY, I thought it my part and duty to acquaint " you, and withall humbly deſire to know your MAJESTY's " pleaſure and reſolution as concerning them. I have cauſed " them to remain all about the Court with their *Horſes*, *Ar-* " *mour*, and *Men*, to attend the Body of our late *Royal Miſtreſs*, " and being generally all deſirous to wait upon your MAJESTY " at your entry into this kingdom, as thoſe that would be " loth to be ſecond to any in all obſequious and ſerviceable Du- " ties to your MAJESTY, wherein I humbly deſire your MA- " JESTY's further direction,

" And ever deſire Almighty God, &c."

If it be neceſſary to add to this account, as here left us by the then CAPTAIN, it will only tend to ſhew that the BAND loſt much of its Dignity early in the reign of King James. This comparative view of it, comprized in ſo very ſhort a period, cannot be better diſcovered than from the following teſtimony of *John Earl* of *Clare* (who had been in the BAND when Sir John Holles) delivered in theſe words, by his kinſman Mr. Gervaſe Holles—" I have heard the *Earl of Clare* ſay that when " he was PENSIONER to the QUEEN, he did not know a worſe

" man

"man of the whole BAND than himſelf; and that all the "world knew he had then an inheritance of 4,000*l.* a year. "It was the conſtant cuſtom of that QUEEN," continues Mr. Holles, "to call out of all counties in the kingdom the *Gentle-*"*men* of the greateſt hopes, and the beſt fortune and families, "and with thoſe to fill the more honourable Rooms [Places] "of her Houſhold Servants, by which ſhe honoured them, "obliged their Kindred and Allyance, and fortified Herſelf*."

From hence we may obſerve, Sir, that it was not the emolument or any lucrative motive which in that reign made gentlemen ſollicitous to be admitted into the BAND; but the pure dignity of the poſt itſelf, added to the laudable ambition of being employed in public characters abroad, or of filling high offices at home.

Mr. Holles then goes on with ſome aſperity, and is more ſevere upon King James and his adherents than I chuſe to repeat; adding that when moſt of thoſe rooms were filled by ſuch inconſiderable perſons as were preferred by favourites, or as money introduced, the better ſort of the Gentry forſook the Court; and among the reſt Sir John Holles. The Queen's ſtudious attachment to the external honour of her Court by the choice of proper officers, as well in point of perſonal appearance, as in birth and education, is given us by Francis Oſborne, Eſq; who lived near the time of which he writes; though it muſt be confeſſed, that from one inſtance which he mentions, the Queen ſeems to have carried her attention ſometimes to a frivolous nicety †. "This Princeſs," ſays he, "in imitation of her Fa-

* Collins's Hiſtorical Collections of the families of Cavendiſh, Holles, &c. p. 84.

† Oſborne's Works, p. 374. This gentleman was then a Cadet of the family ſeated at Chickſands, in Bedfordſhire, the head of which is the preſent Sir George Oſborne, Bart. &c.

"ther, Henry VIII. did admit none about her for PENSION-
"ERS, *Privy-Chamber-Men* *, *Squires* of the *Body*, *Carvers*, *Cup-*
"*bearers*, *Sewers*, &c. (which were not a few in number) but
"perſons of Stature, Strength, and Birth, refuſing to one her
"conſent (demanded before any could be admitted to the
"meaneſt place in her houſe) becauſe *he wanted a tooth*: yet
"was never known to deſert any for age or other infirmity,
"after once inrolled, but either continued them, or, upon their
"diſcharge, gave them conſiderable and well-paid penſions.
"As for her *Guard*, *Uſhers* †, *Porters*, and all attending below
"ſtairs, they were of a no leſs extraordinary ſize, than acti-
"vity for Shooting, throwing the Bar, the Weight, Wreſtling,
"&c."

But to return, Sir, more immediately to the *Penſioners*. Agreably to what is ſtated in *Lord Hunſdon's* Letter—that the BAND was a Seminary from which were derived Stateſmen, and Men of Eminence, in various departments, ſeveral may be traced who aroſe to high Employments, and one indeed became ultimately *Lord Chancellor*. This was *Sir Chriſtopher Hatton*, who, in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, from being one of the *Fifty* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS was afterwards ſucceſſively a *Gentleman* of the *Privy-Chamber*—*Captain* of the *Yeomen* of the *Guard*—*Vice-Chamberlain*—a *Knight* of the *Garter*—and, at laſt, HIGH-CHANCELLOR ‡. Nothing could do more honour to the BAND than that one of it ſhould ariſe to the firſt civil Employment in the kingdom: in ſo mixed a group, however, we

* This was the term given to the *Gentlemen* of the *Privy-Chamber*, and is to be met with on various occaſions.

† By theſe are meant *Yeomen*-Uſhers, a branch of the Yeomen of the Guard.

‡ See Viſcount Hatton, in Collins's Peerage, 1735, and Strype's Annals, Vol. II. in Appendix, p. 158.

muſt expect, on a near inſpection, to find a variety of characters; and accordingly, on the other hand, I am now to mention another of this Corps, who, in the Reign before us, diſgraced his Poſt as much as *Sir Chriſtopher* had before reflected Luſtre upon it. This Gentleman was of the ancient and noble name of *Percy*, Couſin to *Henry* then *Earl* of *Northumberland*, CAPTAIN of the BAND, and who, unfortunately both for himſelf and his Kinſman, was deeply engaged in the Popiſh Plot. He appears to have been the moſt active and atrocious abettor of that Conſpiracy, inſomuch that a particular Proclamation was iſſued (1605) containing not only a promiſe of Pardon to any of his accomplices who ſhould apprehend him; but offering a Reward of *One Thouſand Pounds at the leaſt*, to any that ſhould bring him alive, as much inſight was expected from his Confeſſion towards the diſcovery of his Aſſociates, and the unravelling that myſterious affair *. Mr. *Percy* did not ſuffer the diſgrace of an execution, as many others did, being killed with a few of his confederates, in a rencontre with the Poſſe-Comitatûs in the country whither they had fled: but the *Earl* of *Northumberland* was by a ſentence of the Star-Chamber, fined Thirty Thouſand Pounds, and not only deprived of all his Places, but condemned to perpetual impriſonment for miſpriſion of Treaſon in admitting his Kinſman, whom he knew to be a Popiſh Recuſant, into the BAND, without tendering to him the Oath. The Earl was accordingly committed to the Tower, where he remained fifteen years †. All this appears from

* This Proclamation is extant (among others relative to this buſineſs) in a printed Copy, publiſhed by Authority, 1609.

† More particulars of Mr. *Percy*, relative to the Conſpiracy, not to our immediate purpoſe, may be ſeen in Rapin's Hiſt. of Engl. [Vol. II. p. 171. Fol.] It is, however, worth obſerving, that the fate of ſome of the Conſpirators who fled was

from Dugdale's Baronage—Wilson's Life of King James—and from the Trial of Henry Garnett, in the State-Trials; but I am poſſeſſed of a larger detail of what paſſed in the Star-Chamber on that occaſion, from a MS. in the Cottonian Library. [Veſpaſian, XIV. fol. 451.] which I give in a Note. It is written in the form of a Letter, though without Name, Date, or Addreſs, and ſeems to have been drawn up, either by a Practiſer in that Court, or by another perſon preſent at the Trial, and has the appearance of being a rough copy of what was ſent to ſome gentleman of conſequence, then at a diſtance from London *.

Thus

was ſingularly appoſite to their intended crime; for two or three of them, who had fortified themſelves in a houſe in which they were beſieged, loſt their lives by the exploſion of a barrel of their own *Gun-powder*. [Harrington's Nugæ Antiquæ, Vol. II. p. 239.]

* SIR,

The Proceſſe againſt my Lord of Northumberland, on Fryday was ſevenight (as all other matters of that nature) may be divided into two general Heads,

1. The Crimes objected againſt him, and,
2. The Puniſhment impoſed.

The Crimes, which, under the name of Contemptes, were layed to his charge, I mean thoſe whereon, out of his own verbal confeſſion, his ſentence was grounded, were (beſides many other of leſs importance) prinoipally Three.

1. The firſt was his employing of *Percy* a year and a half before the Queen's death into Scotland, to procure of his Majeſty a mitigation for Catholiques, and ſome toleration of their religion: and that the King's favour in this behalfe might be wholly at the diſpoſal of my Lord of Northumberland, that his Lordſhip might hold the Catholiques in a kind of dependency and ſuſpenſe, till his Majeſty might have peaceable entry and quiet poſſeſſion. By which means, ſaid Mr. Atturney, he went about to derogate from the King's authority, by ſtealing away the heartes of his ſubjectes, and making himſelf head of the moſt factious and traiterous faction in the kingdom.

The ſecond was his making of *Percy* a PENSIONER.

1. knowing him to be a jeſuitical and turbulent Papiſt.
2. without his Majeſty's privity.

3. Without

Thus much, Sir, I have taken the liberty of adding, with reſpect to individuals of very different complexions, and will now proceed with the aggregate body.

The principal circumſtance remaining to be obſerved in this Reign is, that the *Table* which was provided for the Band in the eſtabliſhment of Queen Elizabeth, ſeems to have been commuted for an equivalent in *Board-wages*: for I have before me an Order on the Exchequer, ſigned by the King, in the year 1616, for an impreſt of *Six Thouſand Pounds* for *Wages* and *Board-wages* then due to the *Officers* and the *Band* in general*. This exchange does not ſeem to have taken place till within a very ſhort time before the date of the Order, as it there carries the appearance of a *new* Regulation, and is called *an Encreaſe* of Wages and Allowances to the whole *Band*, and further di-

3. Without giving him the Oth.

4. And that under a kind of fraud and treachery; for being demanded whether he had ſworn *Percy*, or no? he ſaid he had [1].

The Third was his writing of Letters to his tenants in the North, without the Kinge's Licence, during the time of his reſtraint; not for the apprehenſion of *Percy*; but that they ſhould have a care of his Rents, that they might not come to *Percy's* fingers, giving *Percy* thereby a watchword to eſcape, and ſo preferring the ſafety of a little Money before the taking of a capital Traytor; and conſequently before the ſafety of the King and the whole kingdom.

The Cenſure or Puniſhment was *Thirty Thouſand* Pounds fine, the loſſe of all his offices and dignities growing to him by the King's favour, and perpetual priſonment [2].

* The Original is in his Majeſty's State-paper Office.

[1] This was covinous—for I have been informed from the moſt reſpectable authority, that the Earl permitted Thomas Percy, his Lordſhip's next brother, to take the Oath, inſtead of Thomas Percy the traitor.

[2] We are told by Sir Bulſtrode Whitlocke, [Memorials, p. 298.] that the Earl felt the ſeverity of his ſentence with ſo much indignation, that he was afterwards with difficulty prevailed upon to accept his releaſe, when procured at the ſuit of his ſon-in-law, the Lord Viſcount Doncaſter, ſaying, that "nothing of ſtain upon his Honour could be made out, as to the buſineſs of the Gun-powder "Treaſon." The Decree of the Court of Star-Chamber may be ſeen at large in the Harleian MSS. N. 589.

rects,

rects, that for the future thoſe ſtipulated Payments ſhould be made *quarterly*.

It may be obſerved, however, that, though by this Order the *Wages* and *Allowances* were enlarged in general, and in compenſation of the loſs of Diet at the King's charge, yet it is not ſpecified in what proportions the ſum allowed ſhall be divided; ſo that we cannot collect with accuracy the advance that was then made towards the *preſent* individual emoluments of the *Officers* and *Band* reſpectively *. The Books relative to the *Band*, which I have ſeen, do not reach this period by a very great number of years; neither can any thing but ſcattered accounts be expected to have ſurvived the turbulent parts of the following Reign, and the Inter-regnum which enſued. That I may advance nothing without Authority, I have added King James's Warrant for the above Payment in a Note †.

The

* Dr. Chamberlayne, in his Preſent State of the year 1748, ſays, the *Gentlemen Penſioners* formerly had a *Table*, which was taken away by King James, and that in lieu thereof they had 50*l.* each allowed for *Board Wages:* but we are not there told in what degrees the *Pay* of the OFFICERS was advanced.

† JAMES R.

JAMES, by the Grace of God, &c. To the Treaſurer and Under-Treaſurer of our Exchequer, greeting. Whereas Wee are pleaſed, out of our graeious and princely diſpoſition to make an encreaſe of the wages and allowances of the *Captain*, *Lieutenant*, *Standard-bearer*, *Clark of the Cheque*, *Gentlemen Pencioners*, *Gentlemen at Armes*, and *Harbinger*, for the better enabling them to attend upon us, in our ſervice, the ſame not to exceed *in any one year* the ſum of *Six Thouſand Pounds*; This ſhalbe therefore to will and commaund you of ſuch our Treaſure as from tyme to tyme ſhall be and remayne in the receipte of our ſaid Exchequer, to cauſe payment to be made, from tyme to tyme, unto Sir Henry Myn, Knt. now Paymaſter of the ſaid *Band*, and to the Paymaſter hereafter for the tyme being, of all ſuche ſome and ſommes of money as ſhall appeare to be due unto them the ſaid *Captaine*, *Lieutenant*, and the reſt of the *Officers* and *Band* reſpectively, upon Quarterly Rolles, ſubſcribed by the ſaid *Captaine*,

In this Reign, Sir, I firſt diſcern a *Pay-Maſter* peculiarly appropriated to the BAND. Thitherto they had been paid at ſome of the Publick Offices, in common with the reſt of the Royal Houſhold. It was moſt probably on occaſion of the compoſition juſt mentioned, wherein *Wages* and *Board-wages* were thus conſolidated, that a particular *Pay-Maſter* was appointed. The very words of King James's Warrant are of themſelves ſufficient to aſcertain this matter, which are, that payment be made from time to time, "unto Sir Henry Mynn, Knt. *now* Pay-Maſter "of the ſaid BAND, and to the Pay-Maſter hereafter for the "time being, &c."

In all the former eſtabliſhments which I have ſeen, no *Pay-Maſter* appears: but in that of the year 1615* Sir Henry Mynn is ſpecified to have had the office, in which he is likewiſe found in the years 1616 and 1617†. The ſalary annexed to this appointment, in the year 1615, appears to have been 100 marks—but in the two following years I find it to have been only 50*l.* but it is then ſaid to have carried with it *other allow-*

taine, or in his abſence, by the Lieutenant, or in the abſence of them by the hand of the Standard-bearer and Clark of the Checque for the tyme being, to whome any Wages or Board Wages ſhalbe due, and how muche everie of them (his Cheque defalked to our Uſe) ought to receive of the ſame, the firſt payment thereof to begin and take place from the tyme of their laſt Payment, and ſo to continue Quarterly during our Pleaſure. To be taken, had, and received, to the ſaid Paymaſter, reſpectively, without any account, impreſt or other charge to be ſet upon him or them for the ſame, or for anie parte thereof. And theis our Letters, &c. Given, &c.

By Order of Mr. Secretary Lake.

1616.

Expedit apud Bletſoe, Viceſimo Quarto die Julii, Anno Regis Jacobi Decimo Quarto.

P. WINDEBANK.

* In the Coll. of Arms.

† MS. in the Library of the Earl of Shelburne.

ances, which I interpret to mean a ſmall Poundage on the money which paſſed through the hands of the Pay-Maſter: thus much however is clear, that the Poſt was not beneath the acceptance of perſons of rank, for I find afterwards in the following reign (anno 1635) on the authority of a MS. which I have ſeen, that it was then enjoyed likewiſe by a Knight, viz. Sir John Hales *.

As the Poſt carries with it no ſalary whatever at preſent, there is reaſon to ſuppoſe that the *per-centage* might afterwards be encreaſed and deemed a ſufficient emolument for the trouble accompanying the Payment, and that the original *ſalary* was applied to enlarge the Pay of ſome *Officer* of the BAND, perhaps the *Clerk of the Cheque*, whoſe ſtipend, then only 100 marks (or 66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*) at the moſt, was ſoon after the Reſtoration advanced to 120*l.* per annum.

The Reign of King Charles I. Sir, gives us but now and then a momentary view of the BAND. The number was 50, according to the account given by Monſ. la Serre, who ſaw them on duty in the year 1637, when Mary de Medicis, the Queen Mother of France, came into England to viſit her daughter, our Queen Henrietta. He compares them with the *Gens d'Armes* of France, and adds, that each PENSIONER had three Horſes well capariſoned †. The CAPTAIN of the BAND was then William Cecil [the ſecond] *Earl of Saliſbury*, who, together

* The MS. alluded to was the property of the late George Scott, Eſq; of Woolſton-Hall, in Eſſex, whoſe Library was ſold by Auction, 1781.

† "Une Compagnie de cinquante Gentilshommes de la *Bande* des *Penſionaires* "qui ſont comme *Gens d'Armes*, entretenent chacun trois chevaux ſelon l'Ordre "de leur Eſtabliſſement dont ils tirent du Roy *Penſion* annuelle, marchoit à la "ſuite de ſon *Lieutenant*; mais tous enſemble bien montez, & en fort bel equi-"page." [Hiſtoire d' l'Entrée de la Reyne Mere. A Londres, 1639. Reprinted, by Mr. Gough, 1775.]

with

with the *Earl of Morton*, CAPTAIN of the YEOMEN, ſupported Monſ. de la Maſure, the *Lieutenant* of the French Queen's *Garde du Corps* *.

On the triumphal entry of the King into the City of London, after his return from Scotland, 1641, his MAJESTY was eſcorted, among other the Royal attendants, by "The *Earl of* "*Saliſbury*, CAPTAIN of the PENSIONERS, followed by the "GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, with their *Pole-Axes*, all mount-"ed, with Piſtols at their Saddles. And afterwards at dinner, "in the Weſt part of the Hall (Guild-Hall) below the Gate on "the South ſide, was a long Table placed for his Majeſty's PEN-"SIONERS †."

The

* Idem. p. 35.

† Lord Somers's Tracts, Vol. IV. pp. 159, 161. Anciently, when *Revels* were kept during Chriſtmas, at the Court, the ſame feſtivities were obſerved in the principal Law Societies. On theſe occaſions there was elected from the Gentlemen of the Society one who was ſtyled the *Chriſtmas-Prince*, who had his *Great Officers* and *Guards* about him, and among the reſt his PENSIONERS. It may not be amiſs to tranſcribe the account given of the Eſtabliſhment and Retinue of the *Chriſtmas-Prince*, A. D. 1635, as it has a reference to the ſubject before us, from a letter written at that time by the Rev. George Garrard to the Earl of Strafforde, then Lord Deputy of Ireland.—"The Middle-Temple-Houſe," ſays he, "have ſet up a *Prince* who carries himſelf in great ſtate. . . . . He hath all "his *Great Officers* attending him,—Lord Keeper, Lord Treaſurer, Eight White "Staves at the leaſt, CAPTAIN *of his* PENSIONERS, Captain of his Guard, and two "Chaplains, who on Sunday laſt preached before him. . . . My Lord Chamber-"lain lent him two fair Cloths of Eſtate, one hung up in the Hall, under which "he dined, the other in his Privy-Chamber: he is ſerved on the knee, and all "that come to ſee him kiſs his hand on their knee. My *Lord of Salisbury* hath lent "him *Pole-Axes* for his PENSIONERS. He ſent to my Lord of Holland, his Juſtice "in Eyre, for Veniſon, which he willingly ſends him; to the Lord Mayor and "Sheriffs of London for Wine, all obey. *Twelfth-Day* was a great day: going "to the Chapel many Petitions were delivered to him, which he gave to his Ma-

The next time we have opportunity of obſerving the *Band* is upon a very different occaſion: viz. when the King found it neceſſary to take refuge at Oxford, in the year 1642.

A ſeditious Preacher had thrown out ſome words from the Pulpit, which ſo alarmed the KING and his Council, that it was not thought ſafe to truſt his Majeſty's Perſon any where without an extraordinary guard. It was therefore commanded by his Majeſty, with advice of the Council, among other ſecurities, "That as often as his Majeſty did ride abroad, the *Cap-*"*tain* of his *Majeſty's Guard* [*i. e.* of the Yeomen] and the "LIEUTENANT of his PENSIONERS, with *Four* of the GENTLE-"MEN PENSIONERS, ſhould ride continually near his Majeſty's "perſon, and ſuffer none of mean condition, or unknown to "them, to come near his Majeſty *." The ſuſpicions ran that aſſaſſination was intended, as that which dropped from the Preacher was ſimilar to what was recollected to have been inſinuated to the public by the ſame channel, previous to the murder of the Duke of Buckingham by Felton †. The *Penſioners* are again mentioned as part of the eſcorte of the Queen, when ſhe made her entry into Oxford in the ſame year ‡. After that period, as the KING's difficulties daily encreaſed, we cannot expect to hear more of this his Body-Guard; for ſoon afterwards his State gradually diminiſhed, and his perſon fell

"ſters of the Requeſts. He hath a Favourite, whom, with ſome others, Gen-"tlemen of great Quality, he knighted, at his return from Church, and dined "in great State. It coſts this Prince 2,000 l. out of his own Purſe." [Vid. Strafford's Letters, Vol. I. p. 507, Dublin Edition.] For a further and more general account of theſe *Revels* I refer to Dugdale's Orig. Jurid. and to Gerard Legh's Accedence of Armory.

* Mercurius Aulicus, p. 51.

† Idem, p. 50.

‡ Idem, p. 373.

into

into the keeping of thoſe who guarded it for a very different purpoſe.

I ſhall now, Sir, once more, and for the laſt time, trouble you with Ordinances for the government of the *Band*. The copy which I have before me, is indeed without date; but that is aſcertainable to have been of the year 1633, from a letter of the Duke of Montagu, who was CAPTAIN of the BAND 1734, which will be given at length in its proper place.—Though theſe Orders, with a very little qualification, border on thoſe of Queen Elizabeth, yet I apprehend they are *in effect* the laſt; for thoſe of King Charles II. and King James II. are but mere tranſcripts of them.

If they ſeem too rigid for our times, yet they will be found characteriſtic of the Reign of King Charles I. and will confirm an obſervation of Lord Clarendon, who tells us, that the King "kept State to the full, which made his Court very orderly; "no man preſuming to be ſeen in a place where he had no "pretence to be *."

ORDERS *of* KING CHARLES I. *A. D.* 1633.

The Band *of our* Penſioners *having the Honour to be our neareſt Guard, and to have their daily acceſs into our* Preſence Chamber, WE *think fit and ordain, that from henceforth they be freely choſen by* our *Knowledge, out of our* beſt Families, *and ſuch as have beſt Education in ſeveral counties of* our *kingdoms, that all* our *loving ſubjects of beſt Rank and Worth may find themſelves intereſted in the Truſt and Honour of our Service.*

And as many of our Gentlemen Penſioners *as are, or ſhall be hereafter admitted, and not licenſed to be abſent by* Us *or their*

* Hiſt. of the Rebellion, Vol. III. Part 1. Oxford Edit. Oct. 1717.

Captain,

Captain, *or in his abſence by the* Lieutenant *or* Standard-bearer *of the* Band, *ſhall be in our Chamber of Preſence every* Feſtival-Day, Holy-day, *or* Sermon-day, *by* Nine *of the clock in the forenoon, and every* Working-day *by* Ten *of the clock, and ſhall there give attendance with their* Axes, *ready to know what ſhall be commanded them by* Us, *or their ſaid* Captain, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer.

They ſhall not fail to bear their Axes, *and to give attendance on* Us *every ſuch day as we ſhall come abroad to* Morning-Prayer, *and from the ſame, and to and from* Evening-Prayer, *in the Great Cloſet, and ſhall keep the Place where* WE *paſſe to and fro, as the largeneſs of the roome ſhall ſerve.*

In our Progreſſe, or other Remove when we ride, they ſhall keep ſuch places as to them ſhall be appointed by Us, *or by the aforeſaid Officers.*

They ſhall at all times be obedient, and performe all ſuch ſervices as ſhall appertaine unto Us, *and wherein* WE *ought to be ſerved by them, as well in Chambers as in all other places where our pleaſure ſhall be to be ſerved, by the commandment of ſuch as ſhall for the time have authority to command and appoint the ſaid* Gentlemen Penſioners, *and all other our ſervants.*

If any of them fail their duties of appearance at their days in the Place and Hours before-mentioned, they ſhall be checkt for the firſt *fault with the loſſe of* Three *days Wages, for the* ſecond *with the loſſe of* Six, *and the* third *of* Fifteen.

In the like manner they ſhall be checkt if they fail their attendance in the day of our Remove, as well at the taking of our Horſe, *as at* our lighting, *or when we go to or from the Chappel, at Evening or Morning-Prayers.*

The ſaid Gentlemen Penſioners *ſhall, every of them have his* Axe *borne after him by a ſufficient Man, ſaid* Axe *being cleane and bright, as well in all places out of Court as within, unto ſuch place where*

where every ſuch Gentleman Penſioner *ought to bear it himſelf, upon pain of our diſpleaſure.*

Whereas, by Inſtitution and antient Order every Gentleman Penſioner *was allowed but* Three *Months Liberty in the Year of not waiting, and that by the appointment of the* KING, *their* Captain, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer; *and ſo as ere they departed the Court they ſhould give notice to the* Clerk of the Cheque, *or his Deputy, of the time of their Licence, with return of the ſame, or elſe the ſaid Licence to be void, and they to be checkt for their abſence —which Order afterward our Predeceſſor* [*Henry* VIII.], *at the humble ſute of* Sir Anthony Browne, *their* Captain, *enlarged by Quarter-Waiting by courſe, yet ſo as the one half of the* Band *was required continually to attend, withoute any excuſe of ſickneſs or otherwiſe, but that he or they that did fortune to be ſick or have any other lett within his Quarter ſhould, for the time of abſence, find one, his Companion, that was out of his Quarter, to wait and furniſh his place, or elſe to be in danger of the Checque; and the other half of them for the mean time of their Half-year, ſo by their Quarters to be taken at liberty.*

This Order thus enlarged to a Quarterly-attendance, with the conditions thereof, we ratifie and confirm:—Notwithſtanding any Licence given to any of the ſaid Gentlemen Penſioners *by* Us; *the* Captain, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer *ſhall always foreſee that there be not abſent at any time above* Half *the* BAND.

The ſaid Gentlemen-Penſioners *were alſo required by their Inſtitution to be well and ſufficiently furniſhed and provided every one with his* Two Great Horſes *for himſelf and his ſervant, according to his* Oath, *with his Arms and all other Habiliments to the ſame appertaining, to be ready therewith within* two days warning *given to them by their* Captain, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer *upon payne of forfeiture of* Ten Days Wages

for their firſt *default, and for the* ſecond *default to forfeit a* Month's Wages, *and for the* third *to be clearly expelled and put out of the roome of a* Gentleman Penſioner, *and to looſe his whole* Quarter's Wages. *Which proportion of* Two Great Horſes *was* then, *in regard of the liberty granted of* Quarter-Wayting, *increaſed to the finding of* Three Great Horſes *furniſhed accordingly;—and this number, the rather for the late encreaſe of Pay*, We require to be furniſhed by every* Gentleman Penſioner *for our ſervice in their places upon the penalty above-named.*

The whole Band *of* Gentlemen Penſioners *ſhall give their attendance at the Four principal Feaſts of the Year, viz.* Chriſtmas, Eaſter, Whitſontide, *and* Allhallontide, *and at* St. George's Feaſt, *and at our* Coronation-day, *under the Cheque as they do now.*

And notwithſtanding the great liberty of their Quarter-waiting, they are required nevertheleſſe to be at all times in ſuch readineſſe that when warning *ſhall be given them from their* Officers, *they and every of them ſhall, according to the ſame, repair to the Court, and give ſuch attendance for the time as ſhall be appointed unto them, uſing for that ſeaſon, be it in their Quarter or otherwiſe, no leſs diligence than in their Quarter they ought to doe.*

The Clark of Cheque, *or ſuch his Deputy as ſhall be thought fit and ſufficient by the* Captain, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer *to admit, ſhall be every day in the Chamber of Preſence at* nine *o'clocke in the forenoon, there to receive the appearance of the ſaid* Gentlemen Penſioners. *And alſo the* Clark *or his Deputy ſhall be at all other places where the ſaid* Gentlemen Penſioners *ſhall be appointed to give their attendance for our ſervice.*

* Meaning, I conceive, the Compoſition for the Table, which, as we have ſeen, took place in the preceding Reign; or ſome other advancement in addition to that made about the ſame time by King James. See the King's Order for the Payment of the Band, A. D. 1616, p. 64, antea.

The

The accuſtomed Oath ſhall be taken by every Gentleman Penſioner, *at his admiſſion.*

They ſhall be muſtered every Quarter, or Monthly, by their Captain, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-Bearer.

During the *Protectorate*, Sir, we cannot ſuppoſe that *Cromwell* would in any degree retain the identical Guard which had thitherto been the Appendage to the Perſon of A KING, deeming them of courſe inimical to his intereſts; though the Uſurper himſelf adopted a ſimilar Eſtabliſhment. Whether the *Royal* BAND of PENSIONERS was diſmiſſed in form, or turned out of doors (like the Parliament) nothing is left to aſcertain. There is, as one would imagine, a chaſm in the Books of the Council-Office, from the death of King Charles the Firſt to the Reſtoration, and Thurloe's State Papers do not go to ſuch minutiæ. *Oliver* was far from being regardleſs of his perſonal ſafety; on the contrary, he was extremely jealous of every body, not known to him, and at all times kept a vigilant eye to his ſecurity. Roger Coke tells us, "he never ſtirred abroad without "ſtrong Guards, wearing armour under his cloaths, and offen-"ſive Arms too, never came back the common Road, or the "ſame way he went, and always paſſing with great ſpeed; had "many Locks and Keys for the Doors of his Houſes; ſeldom "ſlept above Three nights in one chamber, nor in any which "had not two or three Back-doors, and Guards at all of them *." It is evident, from the circumſtance of *Oliver's* fall from the coach-box, in Hyde-Park, that he *then* had Piſtols about him, notwithſtanding his Guards were at hand, for one of the Piſtols, by the force of the fall, went off in his pocket †.

The

* Coke's Detection, ſub. anno, 1656.

† Thurloe's State-Papers. The ſtory of Oliver driving his Coach with ſix unruly horſes, may ſeem, when ſimply told, to have been merely a frolick; but Dr.

The *Protector*, in the height of his Popularity, ſeems to have had when collectively taken, a reſpectable Body-guard of 140 Horſe. Forty of theſe were originally his Garde du Corps, the reſt ſeeming to have been reſerved for occaſions of State; or defence if required. This eſcorte of 40 was afterwards reduced to 20, to be in conſtant attendance, at which time, by the diminution of his guard, one is led to ſuppoſe that *Cromwell* felt himſelf ſecure in the hearts of the Army and People, in which he was very ſoon afterwards happily miſtaken. Theſe 20 *Gentlemen*, we may aſſimilate to the *Penſioners* (for ſuch indeed they are ſtyled) and the reſt of the troop ſeem not to have been of inferior condition. The letter which I have given in a note, contains my authority for this account *.

As

Bates, in his Elenchu', [p. 299, Edit. 1676.] gives a medical reaſon for it. The Protector, he ſays, was much troubled with the Stone and Gravel, and that he uſed to drink plentifully of ſmall diuretic liquors, and afterwards by violent exerciſe on horſeback, or by the jolting of a Carriage, provoked a diſcharge of what was offenſive in his bladder or kidneys. He would ride hard, we are told, even in his *Promenades à Cheval*, and on the above occaſion ſeems to have choſen the Coach-box, as he there would feel more of the motion of the Carriage than he did within it.

* "Nieuport, the Dutch Ambaſſador, to the States General.

"High and Mighty Lords,

"My Lords, a few days ſince the Life-guard of Horſe of the Lord Protector, "which formerly conſiſted of *Forty* perſons moſt young *Gentlemen* of this nation, "was reformed after ſuch a manner, that *Twenty* of them are to be employed as "*Ordinary Penſioners*, who are to wait continually upon the Perſon of his Highneſs, &c.

"Dated Weſtminſter,

"Mar. 10, 1656, N. S *."

* Thurloe's State Papers, Vol. IV. p. 567.

As to the appearance of these guards, we find them thus described in an intercepted letter of the 4th of April, 1656, very soon after the above-mentioned Reform—"Munday last," says the writer, "the Life-guards muster'd in Tuttle-fields; they "are the best Horse and propereſt Fellowes I have seene *."

Towards the close of his life, however, the Protector seems to have fallen off in his State, and having sunk much in the good opinion of the Army, was forced to take up with a very mean and unprincely Escorte. Thus, if we may credit Roger Coke (who seems to spare neither Kings nor Demi-Kings) he tells us, "that *Cromwell* having so little depend-"ence on his army, set up another of Voluntiers, to have Eight "Pounds a year a-piece, to be ready to serve him. These were "a Company of fellows who, as their pay was little, so were "their horses jades, and lean; and a Troop of the Army-Horse "would beat ten of them, yet they served *Cromwell* so far as "to seize malignants whenever he sent them, and were spies "over all suspected persons, and to inform him of their de-"meanour †." The confidence of the Army had been *Cromwell's* sheet anchor, and Terror his rule of Government, both at home and abroad: when the former was lost, his power began to dissolve apace, and we have an opportunity of observing from the last account of his Body Guard, that the *Protector* himself was then in want of protection, being as much deserted by his former adherents from principles of abhorrence, as the

N. B. The other *Twenty*, the letter adds, were joined to the 100 elected Horse, out of all the Regiments, so that the Life-guard of Horse itself [exclusive of the above mentioned *Pensioners*] consisted of 120 men, besides the Captain and Four Lieutenants.

* Thurloe's State Papers, Vol. IV. 675.

† Coke's Detection. sub ann. 1658.

KING had been by his friends from fears of impending anarchy and deſolation.

At the Reſtoration, Sir, upon the KING's public Entry, ſuch of his late Majeſty's PENSIONERS as were living voluntarily attended (though not then re-eſtabliſhed) deeming themſelves, I preſume, rather ſuſpended than diſbanded *. They were regularly embodied very ſoon afterwards, and reſumed their functions; for in July following, when the KING dined at Guild-hall, the *Band* went on foot on each ſide of his *Majeſty's* Coach under the command of their CAPTAIN *(Henry Wentworth, Earl of Cleveland)* with *Piſtols* in their hands †. In the Proceſſions, from the Tower to Weſtminſter on the day before the Coronation, and on the Coronation-day (1661) they are found in their uſual ſituations ‡.

Having no official books, nor any printed authorities to guide us for ſome years after the Reſtoration, little tranſpires further than that the BAND, in about thirteen years afterwards, was reduced from *Fifty* to *Forty*, at which number it has ever ſince continued; this, Dr. Chamberlayne tells us, took place between the years 1672 and 1674 ‖. There had been, indeed, a great Retrenchment early in the year 1668, which, though attended with changes in ſeveral parts of the Royal Eſtabliſhment, did not affect either the BAND or the OFFICERS; for they are comprehended in one general clauſe of exception, the intention of the Reform being, as it was declared, only to

* Heath's account of the Triumphs at the Reſtoration. London, 1662, 12mo.

† Heath. This manner of their being armed is rather ſingular; but it agrees with that of the year 1641, and comes on the authority of an eye-witneſs.

‡ Ogleby's Coronation of K. Ch. II.

‖ Preſent States.

cut

cut off all ſupernumerary Places, "other than what were in the "time of his *late* MAJESTY, of bleſſed Memory*." On the other hand we learn from Dr. Chamberlayne, that the Pay of the *Officers* was conſiderably encreaſed, which was effected by the above Reduction in point of *number*, without enlarging the *General Expence* †. If the pay of the *Gentlemen* of the *Band* did not ariſe to 100*l.* per annum, by *Wages* and *Board-wages* taken together, in the reign of K. James I. (as Dr. Chamberlayne imagines to have been the caſe) there is room to ſurmiſe that it might receive ſome augmentation on this occaſion.

It is but juſtice to obſerve here the *Reſpectability* of the BAND, when it ſeems to have loſt the tarniſh, which we have been told it received at the Union of the two Crowns; for in a Liſt of the *Band*, 1672 (excluſive of the *Officers*) I find one Baronet and nine Knights ‡.

In the ſhort reign of K. James II. Sir, little is found concerning the BAND in general [redacted] except that if Dr. Chamberlayne's account be the Truth (and there is no reaſon to controvert it) the ſalaries both of the *Officers* and the *Gentlemen*, aroſe to their preſent Standard under King James §. One circumſtance, however, in the above general Ordinances, in the article relating to the Bed-chamber is obſervable, as far as it regards the BAND,

* Lord Chamberlain's Office-Books.

† A ſimilar manœuvre had been made uſe of [A. D. 1688] in the Corps of the *Yeomen* of the *Guard*, when, by a diminution of the number of *Yeomen*, ſalaries were raiſed for the payment of ſome additional *Officers*. [Lord Chamberlain's Office-Books.]

‡ Preſent State of the year 1687. This is confirmed by a Liſt of all the King's forces, (including the *Penſioners* and the *Yeomen*) made and printed 1684.

§ Chamberlayne's Preſent State of that date.

tending

tending to clear up a point of Etiquette, which has ſometimes admitted of a doubt, viz.—Whether the CAPTAIN of the *Horſe-Guards, in Waiting* (now beſt known by the name of the *Gold-ſtick*) or the CAPTAIN of the *Band of Penſioners* has precedence? The queſtion has ariſen from the following words in the Orders of K. K. Ch. I. II. (before given at large) viz. "*The* BAND "*of our* PENSIONERS *having the Honour to be our neareſt Guard,* "*&c.*"

I have ſeen an extract from Orders of K. Ch. II. (1678) which ſay that "An Officer of OUR *Horſe-Guards* is always to attend "and follow *next our Perſon* when we walk abroad, or paſs up "and down from one place to another, as well within doors as "without, *excepting* always Our Bed-chamber." In conformity with this laſt declaration the Orders of K. James II. for the Government of the Bed-chamber of the year 1685 ſay, that "Whenſoever we repair to our Chapel, or elſewhere, or give "audience to an Ambaſſador, or other public Miniſter, out of "the diſtricts of our Bed-chamber, the CAPTAIN of *Our Horſe-*"*Guards in Waiting*, the CAPTAIN of *Our Penſioners* and the "CAPTAIN of *Our Yeomen* of the *Guard* ſhall take his place, "and follow next and immediately unto Our Perſon*." This ſeems to confirm the before-cited Ordinance of K. Charles II. the CAPTAIN of the *Horſe-Guards* being here firſt mentioned. Should any doubts ariſe hereafter, (for I do not preſume to urge any thing definitive,) the noble competitors may from hence form ſome judgment as to the merit of their reſpective claims, with a *Salvo jure* to the reigning Monarch, who can decide at plea-

* Muſeum. [Vide Ayſcough's Catalogue. Article the laſt.] This tranſcript of the Orders for the government of the *Royal Bed-Chamber*, I had the Honour to preſent to the Muſeum, 1782. It is a very fair copy, and was bought by me out of the before-mentioned Collection of the late George Scott, Eſq.

ſure.

ſure. As I give no opinion, it is hoped I have not arrogated too much in taking the opportunity of bringing theſe circumſtances together.

The Æra of the Revolution, favourable to ſome, and ungenial to others, according to the parts they took in the preceding commotions, found in the *Band* of *Penſioners* ſeveral whoſe former political attachments now militated againſt their intereſts; and it is no wonder that in a body of *Forty* Gentlemen of ſome weight and conſequence, at a moment ſo important both to civil and religious liberty, ſeveral ſhould be diſcovered whoſe known inclinations were, ſecretly at leaſt, adverſe to the change.

On the acceſſion of KING WILLIAM, *John Lord Lovelace*, a Nobleman who had not been leſs active againſt K. James than he was firm and zealous in the cauſe of the Houſe of Naſſau, was placed in the command of the BAND *. His Lordſhip, very ſoon after he received his appointment, diſlodged ſome of the *Gentlemen*, for which he gave a manly, loyal, and unequivocal reaſon, to this effect:—that ſeveral of thoſe who had been the Guard to the *late* King JAMES were not proper to have the Care of the Perſon of King WILLIAM. As the Account of this Tranſaction, Sir, is no where to be found but in the Books of the Council-Office, (from whence, with permiſſion, I extracted it,) I ſhall trouble you with the particulars at large.

* On the landing of the Prince of Orange, (1688) at Torbay, *Lord Lovelace* joined him with 70 Horſe, which, in an engagement with the Militia of the county of Glouceſter, were all taken priſoners. [Collins's Peerage, 1735.]

"To

" To the KING's moſt excellent MAJESTY and the *Right Hon.*
" the Lords of his MAJESTY's *Moſt Honourable* PRIVY
" COUNCIL.

" The *humble Petition* of ſeveral of your MAJESTY's *Band*
" of *Gentlemen Penſioners* and of *William Thomas, Eſq;*
" *Clerk of the Cheque* and *Paymaſter* to the ſaid *Band.*

" Sheweth,

" That the ſaid *Band* of *Gentlemen Penſioners* was eſta-
" bliſhed in the Reign of your MAJESTY's Royal anceſtor, KING
" HENRY *the Seventh* *, as the Firſt Guard to his Royal Perſon,
" and his ſucceſſors, and have ever ſince accordingly been con-
" tinued from ſucceſſion to ſucceſſion; and the meaſure of the
" CAPTAIN's power over them is by certain Articles, limited,
" and liberty allowed, as well to the *Clerk of the Cheque* as to
" every one of the ſaid *Band*, of diſpoſing of their reſpective
" Places, (reſerving the approbation of ſuch *Gentlemen* to whom
" ſuch diſpoſition ſhould be made, to their MAJESTIES and their
" ſucceſſors,) and never have been amoveable at the will of their
" CAPTAIN, and the ſame liberty hath been allowed to the
" *Paymaſter*, who is a Patent Officer.

" And your MAJESTY's *Petitioners* are not conſcious to them-
" ſelves of any Neglect relating to the Duty of their ſaid Places
" and Offices, nor hath there ever been any objection made to
" the due executing thereof; and your *Petitioners* can truly ſay
" they have neither acted nor ſpoke, in compliance to the late
" times, any thing which might weaken the Proteſtant intereſt,
" or injure our Laws; but, on the contrary, conſtantly ex-
" preſſed their diſſatisfaction to the meaſures then taken to the
" prejudice of both.

* Erroneous. Vid. ſupra.

" Not-

" Notwithſtanding all this, *the Right Honourable the* LORD " LOVELACE, the preſent CAPTAIN, hath, without any regard " to this ancient Eſtabliſhment and Quality of the *Gentlemen* " whom he commands, diſplaced and turned out *more than half* " *of the ſaid* BAND, and your *Petitioners* in particular.

" Your *Petitioners* therefore moſt humbly beſeech your MA- " JESTY, that they may be continued in their ſaid Places and " Offices, not having hitherto miſbehaved themſelves, and being " moſt heartily diſpoſed to your MAJESTY's ſervice.

" And your *Petitioners* ſhall ever pray for your MAJESTY's " long life and happy Reign.

(Signed)

" Roger Coningſby,
" John Duncombe,
" J Cripps,
" Rich. Spencer,
" Robert Dacres,
" Anth. Gaudy,
" William Thomas,
" Henry Yaxlee,
" Samuel Alſton,
" Geo. Lluelline.

" Received April 8, 1689,
" Read May 9, 1689."

In conſequence of this Petition, an Order was made that LORD LOVELACE ſhould give in an anſwer to the Council-Board. This may be collected from a Caſe which will appear preſently; for the Order itſelf is not entered in the Regiſter Books of the Council-Office. Upon his *Lordſhip's* non-compliance, the diſcarded *Penſioners* preſented a *Second* Petition (on the 30th of May) to the ſame effect as the former, which produced the following Order,

" *Order of Council* upon the *Second* Petition of the GENTLEMEN " PENSIONERS.

" At the Court at Hampton-Court, June 27, 1689.

" PRESENT,

" The KING's Moſt excellent MAJESTY.

" WHEREAS *the Right Honourable* LORD LOVELACE, CAP-" TAIN of his MAJESTY's Band of *Gentlemen Penſioners*, was, by " Order of the Board of the 9th of May laſt, deſired to return " his anſwer to a Petition of ſeveral *Gentlemen Penſioners*, and " of William Thomas, *Eſq*; *Clerk of the Cheque*, and *Paymaſter* " to the ſaid *Band*, who had lately been removed from their " Places, which his Lordſhip not having hitherto done; it was " upon another Petition of the ſaid *Penſioners* and *Paymaſter* " this day ordered by his MAJESTY *in Council*, that the ſaid " LORD LOVELACE be deſired to haſten his ſaid anſwer, to the " end his MAJESTY may take ſuch reſolution thereupon as in " his great wiſdom ſhall be thought fit."

LORD LOVELACE ſtill withholding his anſwer, the *Gentlemen* preferred a *third* Petition to the King and Council, with a *Caſe* annexed, as follows:

" *To the* KING's *moſt excellent* MAJESTY, *and the Right Ho-*" *nourable the Lords of his* MAJESTY's *moſt Honourable Privy* " *Council.*

" *The humble Petition of ſeveral of your* MAJESTY's Band " *of* Gentlemen Penſioners, *and of* William Thomas, " *Eſq*, Clerk of the Cheque, *aud* Paymaſter *of the ſaid* " Band.

" Sheweth,

" That on reading of their *Petition* delivered to your MA-" JESTY in Council the 8th day of April laſt, it was ordered " that the LORD LOVELACE ſhould forthwith give in his anſwer " to the ſaid *Petition*. That on reading your Petitioners *ſecond*

" Petition,

" Petition, which was preſented to your MAJESTY in Council " the 30th day of May laſt, ſetting forth the LORD LOVELACE's " delay, your MAJESTY was pleaſed to order in Council the " ſaid LORD LOVELACE ſhould haſten his anſwer; but his Lord- " ſhip hath not yet thought fit to obey either of the ſaid Or- " ders, he being (as we humbly conceive) not able to give in an " anſwer to the ſame; but by trouble, delay, and charge, to weary " out your MAJESTY's *Petitioners*.

" Therefore humbly pray your ſacred MAJESTY's and this " *Honourable Board's* conſideration on this ſevere uſage; and ſince " the LORD LOVELACE hath ſo delayed your *Petitioners*, and " neglects to obey your MAJESTY's Orders, his Lordſhip may " be ordered to give in his anſwer by a prefixed day; otherwiſe " that they may be ordered to continue in their ſaid Places and " Offices, they being all known Proteſtants, and heartily af- " fected to your MAJESTY's ſervice.

" And your *Petitioners* ſhall ever pray, &c.

" Received July 11, 1689.

" Read in Council July 13, 1689.

" *The* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, *their* CASE on the *Third* Pe- " tition.

" That the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS was eſta- " bliſhed by KING HENRY *the Seventh* *, and have ever ſince " continued. The Rules for their Duty and the CAPTAIN's " Power are ſet forth in ſeveral Articles. KING CHARLES the " *Second* made Eſtabliſhments, where they have liberty to diſ- " poſe of their Places, his MAJESTY reſerving the approbation of " ſuch perſons (to be brought in) to himſelf: That no perſon thus " admitted hath been ever removed at the *Will* of the CAPTAIN,

* Erroneous, as before.

" and till now never any CAPTAIN pretended to any ſuch " power *.

" Notwithſtanding all this, the LORD LOVELACE, the preſent " CAPTAIN, hath turned out *more than Half the Band*, without " any regard to their ancient Eſtabliſhment, or Quality of the " *Gentlemen* whom he commands.

" His *Lordſhip*, after ſeveral of the *Band* were ſworn to his " preſent MAJESTY, cauſed them to cloath themſelves for the " CORONATION, and obliged them to buy at *his* Draper's and " Laceman's,—pay ready monies,—and all this at a dear rate, " yet hath turned out the ſame.

" The GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, for theſe grievances have, " by ſeveral *Petitions* to his MAJESTY in Council, complained " of their ſevere uſage; and on reading the *firſt* Petition, it was " ordered that the LORD LOVELACE ſhould forthwith give in his " anſwer, which was on the 9th day of May laſt. His Lordſhip " neglecting to comply with the ſaid Order, on their *ſecond* Peti- " tion he was ordered to haſten the ſaid anſwer; but to this day " he hath not thought fit to obey either of the ſaid Orders. His " Lordſhip being lately deſired to put in his Anſwer, he ſays " *he will do it at his own leiſure.* Thus, by delays, trouble, and " charge, his Lordſhip deſigns to weary us out, in contempt of " the ſaid Orders.

" We now pray, in our *Third* Petition, a day may be prefixed " for his putting in his Anſwer, in order to a Hearing, or that his " MAJESTY would continue us in our ſaid Places and Offices."

This *Third* Petition produced his LORDSHIP's Anſwer, and a *definitive* Order of Council upon it in the following terms.

* The Eſtabliſhments here alluded to have not appeared to me in the courſe of this inveſtigation. The Orders of King Charles II. of the year 1677, which lie before me, as well as thoſe of King Charles I. (given p. 69) expreſsly direct that the PENSIONERS " *be freely choſen by* OUR KNOWLEDGE."

" *The*

" *The Anſwer of* John LORD LOVELACE *to the Petition of ſeveral*
" *of the late* BAND *of* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, *preſented to*
" *His* MAJESTY *in Council.*

" That your MAJESTY having made this Reſpondent CAP-
" TAIN of your MAJESTY's BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSION-
" ERS, and your MAJESTY having eſtabliſhed all the other
" Officers: this Reſpondent did make choice of, and did ad-
" mit and ſwear, according to the Truſt repoſed by your
" MAJESTY in him, fit perſons into the ſaid BAND, being
" GENTLEMEN of Quality and entire Fidelity to your Majeſty's
" ſervice, and for whom this Reſpondent can be anſwerable to
" your MAJESTY.

" As to the *Petitioners* Complaints that they were in poſſeſ-
" ſion of their Employments under the late King James, im-
" mediately before your MAJESTY's Acceſſion to the Crown, and
" that they did *purchaſe* their Places, and are not amoveable
" at the *Will* of their CAPTAIN—This Reſpondent doth humbly
" anſwer, that the *Petitioners* have not been amoved; for not
" one of them have been choſen or placed in by this Reſpon-
" dent: but the *Petitioners* holding their Employments under
" the *laſt* KING as his Guard, and only during the pleaſure of
" the ſaid KING, the ſame are abſolutely determined;—and their
" having been the *Guard* to the late KING JAMES does not ſeem
" to recommend them, that they ſhould therefore be the *Guard*
" to your MAJESTY.

" And as it has been the method peculiar to your MAJESTY's
" Armies, that *Military* Offices have not been bought, but ſome
" have been conferred for Merit only—this Reſpondent dares
" not think that the *Guard* and Defence of your MAJESTY's
" *Perſon* (which is the greateſt Truſt that can be in this World)
" *ſhould be bought and ſold for Money.*"

" However

" However, this Reſpondent doth humbly ſubmit himſelf " herein and in all things to your MAJESTY's Will and Plea- " ſure, he having hitherto and intending always to ſerve your " MAJESTY, with an honeſt Heart and with clean Hands.

" This Reſpondent therefore humbly prays that the *Petition* " may be diſmiſſed this BOARD.

LOVELACE.

" Read in Council, July 25, 1689."

" *At the Court at* Whitehall, *the 25th of July*, 1689.

" PRESENT,

" The KING's moſt Excellent MAJESTY.

" WHEREAS, on the *Petition* of ſeveral of their MAJESTIES BAND " of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, and of William Thomas, *Eſq*; " *Clerk of the Cheque*, and *Paymaſter* to the ſaid BAND, ſetting " forth that the *Right Honourable* LORD LOVELACE, the preſent " CAPTAIN of the ſaid BAND, hath diſplaced and turned out the " ſaid *Penſioners* of the ſaid BAND; and humbly praying that they " may be continued in their ſaid Places and Offices, not having " hitherto miſbehaved themſelves, and being moſt heartily " diſpoſed to his MAJESTY's ſervice—it was, on the 8th of May " laſt, ordered in Council, that the LORD LOVELACE ſhould " have a Copy of the ſaid *Petition*, and return his anſwer there- " unto to this Board. And whereas on the 18th inſtant his MA- " JESTY in Council was pleaſed to appoint a Hearing of the *Pe-* " *titioners* this day at the Board, touching what they had to al- " ledge, who being called in and heard, and the Anſwer of the " LORD LOVELACE being alſo read, his MAJESTY in Council, " upon the whole matter, thought fit to declare, that ſuch per- " ſons as have been put into the BAND of GENTLEMEN PEN- " SIONERS by the ſaid LORD LOVELACE, ſhall remain and con- " tinue in their places:—but that for the future no perſon ſhall

" be admitted into the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS " who ſhall not be firſt preſented to his MAJESTY for his MA- " JESTY's Allowance and Approbation."

After what paſſed at the *Revolution*, Sir, nothing further is to be traced in the Reign of *King William*. It does not appear that the complainants againſt *Lord Lovelace* were reſtored by the *King*, neither do they ſeem to have urged their Caſe again to his *Majeſty*. Q. ANNE, however, was afterwards pleaſed to ſhew ſome tenderneſs to two of the diſcarded parties, viz. to *William Thomas*, *Clerk of the Cheque*, and *Samuel Aſton*, one of the *Gentlemen* of the *Band*. They ſeverally preferred Petitions to the QUEEN and *Council* (now remaining in the Regiſter-Books) praying relief, and obtained a mandatory recommendation to the *Duke of St. Albans* (then CAPTAIN) to replace both of them on the firſt vacancies. I have thrown the proceedings hereupon in Council into a note *.

It

* " At the Court at St. James's, the 1ſt day of May, 1703.

" PRESENT

" The QUEEN's moſt excellent MAJESTY.

" Upon reading this day at the Board a Report from the DUKE OF ST. " ALBANS on the Petition of *William Thomas*, ſetting forth, that in May 1673, " he was ſworn and admitted into the place of *Clerk of the Cheque* to the *Band of* " *Gentlemen Penſioners*, to hold the ſame for his Life, by Virtue of a Warrant " from *King Charles* II. for which Employment as he alledges he gave *Seven Hun-* " *dred Pounds*, and continued therein till he was diſplaced by the late *Lord Love-* " *lace*, CAPTAIN of the BAND, without Reaſon given for his Removal: and upon " hearing the ſaid *William Thomas* thereunto, her MAJESTY in Council taking " the Petitioner's Caſe into conſideration, is pleaſed to order that the Petitioner " be, and he is hereby, recommended to his Grace the DUKE OF ST. ALBANS, " preferably to any other perſon to be put into the ſaid Office of the ſaid *Band* " of *Penſioners* upon the firſt Vacancy that ſhall happen."

The Order in Mr. *Alſton's* Caſe runs in ſimilar terms, as follows.

" At

It has appeared on the face of theſe Orders of Council, that Mr. *Thomas* purchaſed the Office of *Clerk of the Cheque*, as did Mr. *Alſton* that of *Gentleman Penſioner* in the reign of K. *Charles* II. which conſideration might lead to the QUEEN's clemency; though, at the ſame time, the tranſaction taken in the groſs ſeems to have given great offence to her MAJESTY, who, on her Acceſſion, had iſſued the following ſtrong Declaration from the Council-board, that no *Office in the Houſhold* ſhould thereafter be *purchaſed*, on pain not only of the Royal Diſpleaſure, but of actual diſmiſſion *.

" At the Court at St. James's, the 17th day of May, 1703.

" PRESENT,

" The QUEEN's moſt excellent MAJESTY,

" Upon reading this day at the Board the Petition of *Samuel Alſton*, ſet-
" ting forth that he was turned out of the *Band* of *Gentlemen Penſioners* (which
" employment coſt him *Five Hundred Pounds*) by the late *Lord Lovelace*, without
" any Cauſe alledged, as his Grace the DUKE OF ST. ALBANS certified in a Re-
" port, and humbly praying that an *Order of Council* of the 23d of May, 1695,
" whereby the Petitioner was recommended by their Excellencies the then Lords
" Juſtices to his Grace the *Duke of St. Albans*, to be admitted into and placed
" upon the Eſtabliſhment of the *Band*, upon the firſt vacancy that ſhould happen
" therein, may be confirmed according to its Date and Precedency:——
" It is ordered by her MAJESTY in Council that the ſaid *Samuel Alſton* accord-
" ingly be, and and he is hereby, recommended to his Grace the DUKE OF ST. AL-
" BANS, CAPTAIN of the *Band* of *Gentlemen Penſioners*, to be admitted into and
" placed upon the Eſtabliſhment of the ſaid *Band*, upon the firſt vacancy that
" ſhall happen therein, according to the intention of the ſaid Order."

* There is the more reaſon to ſuppoſe that the Queen conſidered Mr. *Thomas's* Caſe with reſpect to the Poſt of *Clerk of the Cheque*, as compaſſionable, in regard it was purchaſed; becauſe no notice is taken of the *Paymaſterſhip* in the preceding Order, nor does Mr. *Thomas* any where repreſent *that* Office in the ſame light.

"At the Court at St. James's, the 2d day of July, 1702.

PRESENT.

"The QUEEN's moſt excellent MAJESTY.

"Her MAJESTY is pleaſed to acquaint the Lords of the "Council, That having ſettled her Family and Houſhold, her "MAJESTY had reſolved to hinder the *ſelling* of Places for the "future, and to declare her Pleaſure, That no *Officer* or *Perſon* "depending on her MAJESTY, do preſume to *ſell* any *Office* or "*Place*. And to the end that this her MAJESTY's *Royal Pleaſure* "be made public in the beſt manner, her MAJESTY, with the "advice of her Privy Council, has thought fit to order that Mr. "Attorney General and Mr. Sollicitor General do prepare the "draught of a Declaration to be publiſhed in her MAJESTY's "Name accordingly, and do preſent the ſame to her MAJESTY "at this Board, for her *Royal* Approbation."

In conſequence of theſe Inſtructions to her MAJESTY's Attorney General and Sollicitor General, the following Declaration was iſſued:

"At the Court at St. James's the 9th day of July, 1702.

"PRESENT

"The QUEEN's moſt excellent MAJESTY.

"Her MAJESTY is pleaſed to declare that ſhe judges the *ſel*-"*ling* of *Offices* and *Places* in her Houſhold and Family to be "highly diſhonourable to her MAJESTY, prejudicial to her "Service, and a diſcouragement to Virtue and true Merit, which "can and ſhall only recommend perſons to her *Royal* Appro-"bation; and that her MAJESTY is reſolved to prevent ſuch "*ſelling* of the ſame: and therefore declares her Pleaſure to be "that no *Officer* or *Servant* whatſoever that is or ſhall be of "HER Family or Houſhold, do preſume to *ſell* or *buy*, or ſuf-"fer to be *ſold* or *bought*, any *Office* or *Place* therein under

" pain of incurring her MAJESTY's diſpleaſure, and of being
" removed from her ſervice; and that all perſons concerned may
" take notice hereof, her MAJESTY commands that this Decla-
" ration be forthwith printed and publiſhed."

It was accordingly made public by the Gazette of the 13th of July.

Herein we have again followed the *French* practice, for the ſame abuſe had crept repeatedly into the *Gardes du Corps*, and Ordinances were as often made to reform it *. At what point of time theſe and other ſimilar Offices in our Court relapſed into a ſtate of Venality I do not learn; but it was probably a gradual encroachment, which, from indulgence, grew into an inherent right, the purchaſer claiming in his turn to become a Vendor; and it is matter of public notoriety, that, by connivance, ſuch Poſts continue to be transferable property at this day. Theſe tranſactions, however, had certainly met with an abolition by the authority of Parliament in the preſent Reign, had not the univerſality of the practice and the hardſhip attending the meaſure protected the parties, the particulars of which affair I ſhall mention briefly in the order of time. It is obvious, however, to remark, that the loſs of dignity muſt of courſe follow, when Offices once ſo honourable, became indiſcriminately open to every purchaſer; and, from what we have ſeen on the whole, we may obſerve, with Pere Daniel—" *la* SPLENDEUR *d'un dès* " *plus illuſtres* Corps *qui ait eté dans la Maiſon de nos Rois, et ſa* " DECADENCE *entiere* †."

Nothing further being diſcernible in this, or indeed in the following Reign, we may paſs on to that of K. GEORGE II. the interval being merely filled with Orders for general and particular Attendances, Diſpenſations for Abſence, &c. The letter

* P. Daniel, Hiſt. de la Milice Françoiſe, Tom. II. p. 139.
† Idem. p. 111.

of

of the Duke of Montagu, mentioned before, (p. 69.) belongs to this period, in the year 1734, which, while it gives a very polite reprehenſion for previous neglect, and exacts a rigorous attention to duty, admits at the ſame time of a latitude in ſome particulars which exiſts at preſent.

A Letter from his Grace *John Duke of Montagu*, CAPTAIN of the BAND of PENSIONERS, to the *Clerk of the Cheque* *.

" SIR,

" As his MAJESTY has done me the honour to entruſt " me with the Command of his Honourable *Band* of *Gentlemen* " *Penſioners*, ſo I think it an indiſpenſible duty incumbent upon " me to do every thing in that Truſt which may be for the " Honour of his MAJESTY and of the *Band*; and not to ſuffer " any thing which may derogate from either. The *Band* of *Pen-* " *ſioners*, as they have the honour to be his MAJESTY's *neareſt* " *Guard*, ſo they are intitled to an honour which no other of " his Guards have, which is that of mounting Guard daily in " his MAJESTY's *Preſence-Chamber*, and thereby becoming more " nearly entruſted than any other in the immediate Guard of his " MAJESTY's ſacred Perſon.

" This Honour was firſt granted to the Band by K. Henry " VIII. by the Ordinances made by him for the Government " of the Band, and was confirmed by K. Charles I. in the year " 1633—by K. Charles II. in the year 1677—and by K. James " II. 1684.

" This material, and one of the moſt honourable parts of the " Duty belonging to the *Gentlemen Penſioners*, they are not " only under the penalty of the *Cheque*, but by the Oath taken

* Extracted from the Order-Book, by permiſſion of the Captain of the Band.

" at their Admiſſion, obliged to perform; by which Oath they
" are bound to obſerve the Rules and Articles already made, or
" which ſhall be hereafter made for the Government of the
" *Band*, and in all things to be obedient to their Officers, ſo far
" as their Commands ſhall concern the ſervice of the *King's*
" MAJESTY.

" But notwithſtanding their obligations, I have obſerved this
" material part of their Duty of daily attendance in the *Preſence-*
" *Chamber* has been of late years neglected, which I can attri-
" bute to no other cauſe in the *Gentlemen* than the want of
" their being rightly informed of their Duty, which if they had
" known, I am perſuaded they would never have neglected that
" Duty which they owe to his MAJESTY and obliged to by their
" Oath, and which is a diſhonour for them to omit.

" And as I am perſuaded it will be entirely pleaſing to the
" *Gentlemen* to have them maintained in every part of the Ho-
" nourable Privileges belonging to them, which at the ſame
" time is conſiſtent with the Duty which myſelf and they owe
" to his MAJESTY: it is my intention that from New-year's
" Day next you do take due care, (as you are obliged by your
" Office either by yourſelf or by your Deputy) that the *Gentle-*
" *men* of the *Band* do attend every morning with their *Axes* in
" the *Preſence-Chamber*.

" By the Articles of the *Band*, the whole *Band* are to at-
" tend during *Chriſtmas* time; but I ſhall diſpenſe with the at-
" tendance of the whole for this time,—provided that all the
" *Gentlemen*, who are now in town, do give their attendance
" on the *firſt of January*, and that from that time forward *Five*
" of the *Gentlemen* do attend every morning*, in the *Preſence-*
" *Chamber*, with their *Axes*, from the hour of Ten till his MA-

* At that time the King had a Levée every morning.

"JESTY is gone to Dinner, and that they alſo attend with their "*Battle-Axes* in the *Preſence-Chamber* every Drawing-room "night, and other public nights *, from Eight o'clock in the "evening till his MAJESTY is retired, and always to ſtand to "their Arms when any of the ROYAL FAMILY, or the CAP-"TAIN paſs by.

"This is what I deſire you will forthwith acquaint the *Lieu-"tenant*, *Standard-bearer*, and *Gentlemen* of the *Band* with, "and as it is a Duty ſo much for the Honour of the KING to "have performed, and for the *Gentlemen* to perform, ſo I am "perſuaded it will be with the greateſt pleaſure the *Gentle-"men* will receive this Order, and that conſequently they will "obey it with the greateſt chearfulneſs.

"I am, Sir,

"Your Friend and Servant,

"MONTAGU.

"Ditton,

"Dec. 28, 1734.

"I would have you every week let me have a Return of the "Names of the ſeveral *Gentlemen* that have mounted Guard on "the ſeveral days of that week.

"To George Turner, *Eſq*;

"*Clerk of the Cheque* to

"the *Band of Penſioners*."

The BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, Sir, having been ſo long a mere appendage to the KING's ſtate and the parade of the Court, one does not expect to hear again of *Muſters*, *Horſes*, *Arms*, &c. but the internal diſquietude of the northern parts of the king-dom had, in the year 1745, ſo nearly called the KING into the

* Queen Caroline had her Drawing-Rooms in an Evening.

Field,

Field, that the BAND actually received an Order from *Sir William Wynne* the LIEUTENANT, in the abſence of *Lord Hobart*, (the CAPTAIN) to prepare themſelves to attend his MAJESTY, who had reſolved to ſet up his Standard on Finchley Common. Every body knows that the deciſive battle of Culloden, gained by his late Royal Highneſs William Duke of Cumberland, prevented the KING from taking the Field. The following are the words of the Order ſent by the *Clerk of the Cheque* to each *Gentleman* to accompany the Royal Standard.

" SIR, " Dec. 5, 1745.

" The Rebels having advanced to Derby, the KING has " ſignified his intention to ſet up his Standard on Finchley Com- " mon. You are therefore commanded to acquaint the *Gentle-* " *men* of the BAND to be in readineſs with their *Servants*, *Horſes*, " and *Arms*, to attend his MAJESTY there.

" I am, Sir,

" Your Friend and humble Servant,

" WILLIAM WYNNE *.

" To George Turner, *Eſq*; *Clerk*
" *of the Cheque* to his MA-
" JESTY's *Band of Gentlemen*
" *Penſioners.*"

Thus far, Sir, I have brought forward every material occurrence that I have been able to collect reſpecting the BAND, in chronological order, nearly to the middle of the preſent Century; and yet a circumſtance happened ſo lately as the year 1782, which muſt not be paſſed over in ſilence.

Chamberlayne tells us, that one old privilege of the *Gentlemen Penſioners* was that they ſhould be admitted to Commiſſions

* Order-Book of the Band.

in

in the Army preferably to all other perſons whatſoever*. I have not ſeen the Authority for ſuch an Aſſertion, but it conforms very much with what is ſtated in Lord Hunſdon's letter to King James I. where the *Band* is conſidered as a ſchool to qualify Gentlemen for higher and more active Employments. This remove from the *Band* into the *Army*-eſtabliſhment, I am informed, was meditated a few years ago, when the Earl of Lichfield had the Command; but difficulties aroſe concerning Rank, and the matter dropped.

An intention of an inverſe nature was entertained by Mr. Burke, in his Bill for the Reform of the Royal Houſhold, which was brought into the Houſe of Commons in the above year 1782, whereby it was propoſed that no Poſt under the command of the CAPTAIN of the BAND ſhould be ſold, but be ſupplied thereafter by *Officers* of the Navy or Army *upon Half-pay* of a certain ſtanding, (left to the determination of a parliamentary Committee) from the date of their firſt Commiſſion. The Officers of the *Yeomen of the Guard* (the CAPTAIN excepted) were placed in the ſame predicament. This Clauſe, if carried to effect, would have been fraught with private injury, inaſmuch as the *Officers* of both theſe Bodies, as well as the *Gentlemen* of the *Band* then in Office, had all bought their Poſts on the faith of their transferability, and would thereby have been tied down to a life-intereſt only, after having paid for their reſpective Purchaſes *from one to ſix thouſand Guineas*. Mr. Burke, on the ſecond introduction of his Bill with amendments, became ſenſible of the oppreſſion involved in the firſt draught of it, and the Clauſe was

* Preſent State of the Year 1737, by John Chamberlayne, Eſq.—He adds, That none ſhall be admitted into the Band except they ſhall have ſerved at their own Charge, for Six Months at leaſt, as Gentlemen at Arms, or Penſioners Extraordinary. This circumſtance, for want of confirmation, I leave doubtful.

omitted;

omitted; but not till the *Band of Penſioners*, on their part, had preſented the following *Petition* to the *Houſe of Commons*.

" To the *Honorable* the COMMONS of *Great Britain* in Parlia-
" ment aſſembled.

" The Humble *Petition* of the *Gentlemen* belonging to the Ho-
" norable *Band* of *Penſioners*,

" Sheweth,

" THAT your *Petitioners* having peruſed the Bill before " this Honorable Houſe, '*For enabling his Majeſty to diſcharge the* " *Debt contracted upon the Civil Liſt Revenues, and for prevent-* " *ing the ſame from being in arrear for the future, by regulating* " *the mode of payment out of the ſaid Revenues, and by ſuppreſſing* " *or regulating certain Offices therein mentioned, which are now* " *paid out of the Revenues of the Civil Liſt*,' are under the greateſt " concern to find it propoſed to be enacted by ſuch Bill, '*That* " *all Commiſſion and other Officers belonging to the* Band *of* Gentle- " men Penſioners, *under the* CAPTAIN *of the Band, as alſo the* " *Vacancies in the* Band *of* Gentlemen Penſioners, *ſhould not be* " *ſold, but that the Officers and private* Gentlemen *of the* Band *of* " Penſioners *ſhould be filled only by* Officers *of the* Army *or* Navy " upon Half-Pay;'

" That your *Petitioners* beg leave to inform this *Honorable* " HOUSE, that it has been cuſtomary for many years paſt to " purchaſe the Office or place of a private *Gentleman* of the " *Band* of *Penſioners*, and to ſell the ſame (with the approba- " tion of the CAPTAIN) as occaſion offered:

" That, in confidence of being permitted to ſell ſuch Office " or Place, your *Petitioners* have been induced to give, on an " average, *One Thouſand Guineas* for the ſame:

" That

" That the *Salary* of ſuch Office or Place, after payment of " the Land Tax and other out-goings, ſeldom producing more " than the net annual ſum of *Seventy-nine* pounds, and the ex- " pence of the neceſſary regimental or uniform-dreſs of your " *Petitioners* being deducted thereout, reduces the Income to " about *Seventy-ſix* Pounds *per annum*:

" That many of your *Petitioners* being Gentlemen of ſmall " fortunes, and having little elſe to depend on than this income, " and ſome of your *Petitioners* being married and having chil- " dren, will be very much diſtreſſed if they ſhould not be per- " mitted to *ſell* their Offices or Places.

" *Your Petitioners therefore with the greateſt Deference ſub-* " *mit their Caſe to the Juſtice and Wiſdom of this Ho-* " *norable* HOUSE, *truſting, that on due Conſideration they* " *ſhall have ſuch Indemnities and Relief in the Premiſes,* " *as to this Honorable* HOUSE *ſhall ſeem meet.*

" *And your* Petitioners *ſhall ever pray.*"

From the fore-going *Petition*, Sir, the preſent ſtate of the BAND may in moſt points be collected: but notwithſtanding I have treſ- paſſed ſo much on your patience, there are ſome particulars yet remaining, with which I muſt beg leave to detain you for a few minutes longer.

In the Liſt of the *Officers* and *Gentlemen* before given in the Reign of KING HENRY, and in all others which I have ſeen, the *Harbinger* is mentioned, of whom we have as yet taken no no- tice, and who, we learn from Lord Hunſdon's Letter, had the Rank of a *Gentleman-Harbinger*. Our Kings, till the late Reform (1782) had three Orders of *Harbingers*, viz. A *Knight-Harbin- ger*;—one or more *Gentlemen-Harbingers*;—and five or more *Yeomen-Harbingers*. It is not neceſſary to go into the functions

of theſe Officers on this occaſion; ſuffice it to ſay, that in the diſtribution of lodgings formerly, when the Court moved in progreſſes, &c. the *Knight*-Harbinger provided for the accommodation of the KING and ROYAL FAMILY,—the *Gentlemen*-Harbingers for the *Great Officers*,—and the *Yeomen*-Harbingers for the reſt of the Retinue *: it was therefore no ſmall honour that the BAND of PENSIONERS ſhould be allowed a peculiar Officer of this denomination, and a ſtill greater, that he ſhould be of the *ſecond* Order. There is at this time another Appendage of a late date, viz. a *Meſſenger* and *Axe-keeper*, (conſolidated Offices); not properly a branch of the Eſtabliſhment, as the party is paid by the BAND: this latter appurtenance however ſeems rather to have been a revival, by general conſent; for we have ſeen that formerly each *Gentleman*, on Muſters, and ſuch other occaſions, was allowed to have his *Axe* borne after him, by a ſervant, to the places of Rendezvous †.

The GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS are now ſtyled *Eſquires* in their Warrants of Appointment, which puts them upon a par with CAPTAINS in the Army, though they have no military Rank; and yet it is obſervable, that in the Proclamation whereby Mr. Percy is declared a Traitor, in the Reign of K. James I. he is deſcribed by the name and addition of Thomas Percy, *Gentleman*. There were ſeveral Proclamations relating to him, in not one of which he is ſtyled *Eſquire*.

At what time the *Uniform* was firſt adopted ſimilar to it's preſent mode (according to the faſhion of the day), I cannot determine, though it may moſt probably be attributed to the pe-

* The Offices of *Gentleman-Harbinger* and *Yeomen Harbingers*, were aboliſhed 1782: and that of *Knight-Harbinger* now only remains.

† I find no trace of theſe ſubordinate Officers in the Preſent States, either of Chamberlayne or Miege, till the beginning of the Reign of King George II. The *Meſſenger's* is the oſtenſible Office, and [redacted] the Poſt of *Axe-keeper* is underſtood to paſs with it, though not expreſſed in the *Meſſenger's* Warrant.

riod:

riod of the Reſtoration, from which time it has acquired on every change, a ſtill more military Caſt. There ſeems generally to have been a conformity of dreſs, at leaſt in the Outward Garment of the *Band:* thus at the ſiege of Boulogne, (1544) we have ſeen the *Penſioners* habited alike, and again at the Coronation of K. Edw. VI. though indeed at one of the Muſters in that King's Reign they appear variouſly dreſſed and ornamented. We however find their Habit reſtored to uniformity in the Reigns of Q. Mary and Q. Elizabeth, after which we have no view of it till we come very near our own times *. The preſent *Uniform* is ſo well known as to require no deſcription, and may poſſibly alter in ſome points on the next Renewal, being entirely at the pleaſure of the *Captain*, with the *King's* approbation:—but I ſeem to have ſaid enough already on the ſubject to draw upon myſelf the Cenſure which Biſhop Nicolſon has paſſed upon Hall the Chronicler †.

With reſpect to other *Enſigns of Office*, the CAPTAIN bears an *Ebony* Staff with a *Gold Head*, in the form of a Cane, which he receives from the KING, without any other Commiſſion, and which he ſurrenders likewiſe to the KING on the Reſignation of his Poſt. At what preciſe time this Badge was firſt adopted, we can only conjecture: thus much however ſeems to carry it to the Reſtoration, as in a Plate of a Proceſſion of the Knights of

* The following circumſtances may ſerve to ſhew ſomething of the official Habit in the earlier parts of the preſent Century. In the Order for New Cloaths on the Birth-day of King George I. (May 28, 1726,) it is ſpecified that the Gentlemen ſhould wear *Scarlet Stockings*. In the next Reign, (A. D. 1751.) they were exchanged for *Light Grey Stockings*, and the Order further preſcribed *Brigadier-Perukes* and *Buckſkin-Gloves*. [Order-Book].

† "If the Reader," ſays his Lordſhip, "deſires to know what ſort of Cloaths "were worn in each King's Reign, and how the Faſhions altered, this is an Hi- "ſtorian for his purpoſe." [Engliſh Hiſtorical Lib ary, p. 71. 2d edit.]

the Garter, 1671, in Aſhmole's Hiſtory of the Order, the CAPTAIN is placed at the head of the BAND with a ſimilar *Baton**.

The CAPTAIN is ſworn into his Poſt by the LORD CHAMBERLAIN *in perſon*, by virtue of the KING's Warrant.

The LIEUTENANT and STANDARD-BEARER have ſimilar Staves of *Ebony*, with Heads of *Silver*, which they likewiſe receive from the KING, as Inveſtitures in Office, after which they are ſworn by the *Clerk of the Cheque*, in conſequence of a Warrant from the CAPTAIN. The CLERK OF THE CHEQUE wears an Officer's *Uniform*, and has likewiſe an *Ebony* Staff, inferiorly ornamented on the Head, (being partly *Silver* and partly *Ivory*) which was firſt allowed by *the Duke of Montagu* when Captain, 1737, as appears from the Order-Book now before me, where the following Memorandum is found;

Dec. 7th, 1737.

" His *Grace* the DUKE OF MONTAGU was pleaſed to give *a* " *Staff* to George Turner, Eſq; *Clerk of the Cheque*, and directed " him to carry the ſame whenever he attended on his MAJESTY " in the *Preſence-Chamber* †."

This Officer is ſworn by the CAPTAIN;—and receives the *Staff* from him, and not from the KING.

The GENTLEMEN *of the* BAND are ſworn by the *Clerk of the Cheque*, by the CAPTAIN's Warrant.

It need not be ſaid that the principal *Inſignia* of Office belonging to the GENTLEMEN are their *Axes*. The Heads of them reſemble the ancient *Axes* uſed in cloſe onſet with the enemy; the offenſive part is ſmaller, for eaſe and convenience; though the Shaft is longer, for State: ſo that the proper term for them is *Pole-Axes*, they being elongated *Battle-Axes*. This weapon was formerly a part of the Royal Equipment in War, and in

* Chap. XXI. Sect. 4.

† Order-Book. This Indulgence carries the more honour with it, as the *Clerk of the Cheque* of the *Yeomen* of the *Guard* has no ſuch official Badge.

engravings

engravings from old Portraits we often ſee martial Kings drawn with the *Battle-Axe* in their hands; and at funerals, both of our KINGS, and even of QUEENS REGENT, the *Axe* was carried with great pomp, and offered together with the reſt of the armorial Regalia at the Altar. Thus at the interment of *K. Henry* VII. Sir David Owen carried the King's Helmet, which was crowned; after whom "rode Sir Edward Howard, the ſecond ſon of the Earl "of Surrey, Treaſurer of England, armed compleat with the "King's Harneſs, his face diſcovered, bearing in his hand the "King's *Battle-Axe*, the head downwards, reſting on his foot *." Again, at the funeral of *Q. Mary*, after the perſons who bore the *Helmet* and Creſt, "the Man of Arms, the Lord Sheffield, "came riding, armed at all pieces ſaving the head, with a *Pole-* "*Axe* in his hand, and lighted at the Choir door, and being "led from thence to the High Altar by two noblemen, offered "the ſaid *Pole-Axe*, and after went to the Veſtry, and was "there unarmed †."

The *Axes* of the *Penſioners* are repreſented very differently from any other appearance of them that we have opportunity of obſerving, in Vandyck's ſketch of the Proceſſion of the Knights of the Garter, 1639, propoſed as part of a delineated hiſtory of the Order, to have been repreſented (in conformity with the Ceiling) on the Walls of the Banqueting-houſe at Whitehall ‡." The *Axes* there have rather the form of *Adzes*, without any pike or horizontal ſpikes, as at preſent, with the Shaft quite plain and unornamented, whereas, even in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, in the Hunſdon painting, they come much nearer thoſe in uſe at this time. In the next reign (of Charles II.) the *Axes* ſeem entirely to have aſſumed their preſent ſhape and em-

* Leland's Collectanea. Vol. IV. p. 303. in the Addenda.

† Idem. Vol. V. p. 321.

‡ The original in the poſſeſſion of the Earl of Northington, an engraving of which was publiſhed in 1783, in Aqua tinta, by Richard Cooper. See more of this deſign in Mr. Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting in England. Art. Vandyck.

belliſhments, as we may diſcern from the repreſentation of a proceſſion of the Knights of the Garter given by Aſhmole *. The above drawing of Vandyck being in Chiaro ſcuro, the Colour of the Habit of the *Penſioners* is not diſcernible; neither does the *Captain's* official Baton (if then in uſe) appear from the Proceſſion in the year 1639; for *Theophilus* EARL *of* SUFFOLK (then the CAPTAIN) being a Knight-companion of the Order, walked in his place, and is not diſtinguiſhed from the other Knights by any Enſign of Office.

On a Demiſe of the Crown, or on the Death of a Queen-Conſort, the BAND of PENSIONERS attend the Funeral, and flank the Canopy, carrying their *Axes* reverſed, and on ſeveral of theſe occaſions the *Axes* have been put *in Mourning*, that is, their Tufts were black, and their Shafts were covered with black velvet, ſtudded with black nails, inſtead of the uſual covering of crimſon velvet, ornamented with gilt nails, &c †.

* Hiſt. of the Order of the Garter, Chap. XXI. Sect. 4.

† This was done on the demiſe of *Q. Anne*—of *K. George* I. and of *Q. Caroline*. Till the Acceſſion of his preſent Majeſty, Orders for the Mourning iſſued from the CAPTAIN *in writing*, addreſſed to the *Clerk of the Cheque*, who notified them to the *Band*, and were not included in any public Order from the *Earl Marſhal*—the *Lord Chamberlain*, or the *Secretary at War*. On the demiſe of the *late* King, to give the Court a more military appearance, it was only required that the *Band* and the *Officers*, (together with the *Officers* of the *Yeomen* of the *Guard*,] in common with naval and military Officers, ſhould wear a Crape round the left arm: by which means the *Band* became included in the *Order* for Mourning which iſſued from the *War Office*.

Having gone thus far into minutiæ, it may not be amiſs to preſerve the laſt Order of this kind, which iſſued interiorly from the *Captain*.

On the demiſe of the Crown [1727] the *Band* was directed to wear---"Scarlet "Coats trimmed with black, black cloth Waiſtcoats and Breeches; black Swords "and Buckles, and to put their *Axes* in Mourning."

On *Q. Caroline's* death [1737] the Mourning was ſtill cloſer, viz.-- "Scarlet "cloth Coats without buttons on the ſleeves, or pockets, with Waiſtcoats and "Breeches of black cloth, Weepers broad hemmed, chamoy Gloves, crape Hat-"bands, black Swords and Buckles, and their *Axes* to be covered with black vel-"vet." [Order-Book.]

Some-

Something might be expected in this account concerning the BATTLE-AXE-GUARDS in Ireland; but they, being a body of *Yeomen* of the *Guard* (like thoſe in England) will be mentioned in a future Memoir.

As to the Duty of the GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS at preſent, it may be termed very inconſiderable, having diminiſhed in proportion as State has relaxed, and indeed it has always been governed by the temper of the times; ſo that the *Band* has long been an inactive Body, merely appertaining to the KING's domeſtic Dignity, though liable to be called into Field-attendance, in conformity with what we have ſeen was intended in the laſt Reign.

Five of thoſe *Gentlemen* who are on the quarterly Rota now appear every *Levée* Day and every *Drawing-room* Day, in the *Preſence-Chamber*, and ſtand to their Arms when any of the *Royal Family* paſs through *.

On *Sundays*, and whenever the KING goes to the Chapel, the whole *Quarterly* Guard of *Twenty* keep the Paſs in the *Preſence-Chamber* in going, and in the *Gallery* on the return, bringing up the rear of the Proceſſion. In the Room where the KING receives an Addreſs on the Throne, they are ranked in like manner, as they alſo are in the interior Approach to the *Houſe of Peers* when the KING goes thither, excepting the *Five* Gentlemen ſtationed at St. James's. On all ſuch occaſions they are covered *en militaire*.

This attendance at the entrance of the *Houſe of Peers* is a remnant of their ancient Duty, which was formerly carried much further: for in the reign of King James I. when the KING and the PEERS went in proceſſion to *Parliament*, on horſeback in their Robes, the *Gentlemen Penſioners* (I preſume the whole Band) eſcorted the KING on each ſide of the Cavalcade on foot †.

* See the Duke of Montagu's Letter, antea, p. 91. wherein this indu'gence as to number is given.

† Extracts from the Journal of Sir Simond's D'Ewes, in Bibl. Topog. Brit. N. XV. pp. 19. 20. The original is in Bibl. Harl. N. 1646.

The

The Duty of the *Five* Gentlemen attending in the *Preſence-Chamber* likewiſe went further in the late Reign than it now does; for an Order made by the *Duke of Montagu* (the CAPTAIN) in the year 1737, directs, that when the KING goes to the *Parliament-Houſe*, "the *Five* Gentlemen, waiting in the "*Preſence-Chamber*, do always attend his MAJESTY down ſtairs "with their *Axes*, to his Coach, and wait till it is gone off; "and on his return from the *Houſe* to St. James's, they are to "receive him at his alighting out of his Coach, and guard his "MAJESTY up-ſtairs to the *Preſence-Chamber*, where they "uſually wait." This Order moreover enjoins, that "*Four* "of the Gentlemen *in waiting* on his MAJESTY at the *Parliament-Houſe*, do receive him at his getting out of his Coach, "and follow into the *Prince's Chamber*, where his MAJESTY "robes, and place themſelves as near the KING as conveniently "may be, before the *Yeomen of the Guard*, and ſtand to their "Arms till his MAJESTY is gone into the *Houſe*; and that "they place themſelves in a like manner againſt his MAJESTY "comes out of the *Houſe*, and whilſt his MAJESTY un-robes, "and attend him down ſtairs to his Coach *."

And now, Sir, I have but one more official Circumſtance to trouble you with on the part of the BAND, not the leaſt ancient, nor the leaſt honourable, Branch of their Duty, which is that the *Gentlemen Penſioners* have a preſcriptive Right to carry up the Royal Dinner on Coronations, without exhibiting any Claims, as others do, who often contend for the performance of ſimilar Offices on ſuch occaſions, in quality of *Carver*, *Cup-bearer*, *Sewer*, &c. &c. &c. Theſe laſt being feudal ſervices, appendant to Lands and Offices held of the Crown, to be performed ſolely on Coronations, occur but ſeldom, while the BAND of PENSIONERS had the further honour of carrying up the ſecond Courſe at St.

* Order-Book.

George's

George's Feaſt. This, which formerly was an annual Solemnity of the firſt magnitude (excluſive of Feſtivals purely religious) is now not obſerved, except as a Collar-day, when the 23d of April (St. George's Day) falls on a Sunday; unleſs we may be allowed, by tranſpoſition to call *that* day St. George's Feaſt, when there is an Inſtallation of Knights of the Garter at Windſor, on which occaſion likewiſe, if the KING be preſent, the GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS now perform the Office of carrying up the ſecond Courſe *.

In reward for ſuch ſervice on Coronations, the Sovereign has of late years uſually conferred the Honour of Knighthood on ſome of the *Officers* or *Gentlemen of the Band*, ordering the cuſtomary Fees to be paid at the Treaſury; and on Inſtallations the King often confers the ſame Honour, but does not carry the compliment ſo far as to diſcharge the Fees †." This

* The Ceremonial of ſerving the ſecond Courſe of the Royal Dinner on Inſtallations of Knights of the Garter is thus exhibited by Aſhmole, as performed 1663, though he confeſſes that the drawing is defective for want of room in the Plate ‖:—Enough however is preſerved for our purpoſe, viz.

" Two Serjeants at Arms,
" Comptroller of the Houſhold,
" Two Serjeants at Arms,
" Treaſurer of the Houſhold.
" The Sewer.
" GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS carrying the Diſhes,
" *Two* and *Two*.
" Maſter of the Houſhold,
" A Clerk of the Green Cloth,
" A Clerk Comptroller of the Green Cloth,
" Second Clerk of the Kitchen,
" Cofferer of the Houſhold,
" A Clerk of the Green Cloth,
" A Clerk Comptroller of the Green Cloth.
" Chief Clerk of the Kitchen.

† On the Coronation of his preſent MAJESTY the *Standard-bearer* and the *Senior Gentleman* of the BAND were knighted, and the uſual Fees paid at the Treaſury. On the other hand, when the King aſſumed his Stall at Windſor, as Sovereign of the Order, 1762, the *Lieutenant* of the BAND received the honour of Knight-

‖ Order of the Garter, pp. 528. et. ſeq.

This honourable Service of carrying up a part at leaſt of the Royal Dinner, has long been an appendage of Office to the BAND on other ſolemn and ſplendid occaſions, as well as at Coronations and at St. George's Feaſt. Thus on the Marriage of King Philip and Queen Mary, the *Gentlemen Penſioners* we are told chiefly carried up the Dinner, at which Ceremony their CAPTAIN (*Thomas Ratcliffe, Earl of Suſſex*) officiated as *Sewer* *. On other leſs public Solemnities, and even in Progreſſes, when the Sovereign either gave or accepted an entertainment in State, the BAND performed the ſame Office: as for example, when Q. Elizabeth, in a Progreſs, viſited Arch-biſhop Parker, at Canterbury, 1573, the Dinner was ſerved by her MAJESTY'S PENSIONERS,—" Reginæ a Stipatoribus, quos *Penſionarios* appellant, " in mensâ miniſtratum eſt †."

To return, Sir, for a moment, to the Ceremony uſed at Inſtallations of Knights of the Garter, Aſhmole tells us that the BAND formerly went in guard on each ſide of the Sovereign and the Knights-Companions, as they did, for inſtance, in the eighth year of King Charles I. to and from St. George's Chapel ‡: but afterwards, in the next reign, when Aſhmole wrote, the BAND cloſed the Proceſſion, *Two* and *Two*, with the CAPTAIN at their head ||. This change of Poſt had at that time taken place

hood; but the Fees were not allowed by the Treaſury-Board, for want of a precedent, and the *Lieutenant* paid them himſelf—as did the *Clerk of the Cheque*, who was knighted at the Inſtallation, 1771. King Charles I. ſoon after his Coronation in Scotland (1633) knighted no leſs than *ſeventeen* of his GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. [Catalogue of Knights made by King Charles, collected by T. W. London, 1642, duod.]

* Strype's Memorials. Vol. III. p. 136. The Office of the *Sewer* is to place the Diſhes properly on the Table.

† The account of this Progreſs, written in Latin, is given in the Appendix to the ſecond Volume of Strype's Annals of the Reformation.

‡ Hiſt. of the Order of the Garter, pp. 515. 566. 570.

|| Idem. See the Plate between p. 576 and p. 577.

in other Proceſſions, as we have ſeen in the courſe of this Memoir, and therefore may be attributed to the Reſtoration, a period which introduced many ſimilar alterations about the Court.

While the *Sovereign's* Table on theſe occaſions is thus ſerved by his BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, the *Yeomen of the Guard* (who daily carry up the King's Dinner in private) are conſigned to the performance of the like Office at the Table of the *Knights-Companions*:—and as I cannot leave the *Band* in the poſſeſſion of a more honourable Employment, I here, Sir, ſet you at liberty, with many Apologies for the length of this Memoir, and remain, with great Reſpect for You and the Society,

Your obliged,

and moſt obedient,

humble ſervant,

SAMUEL PEGGE.

Whitehall,
June 4, 1784.

APPENDIX.

APPENDIX. No. I.

IT is ſcarcely poſſible, Sir, at this diſtance of time, to preſerve a regular ſucceſſion of the ſeveral CAPTAINS of the BAND of PENSIONERS from its Inſtitution, which comprehends a period of more than *Two Hundred and Seventy Years*: but ſuch whoſe Names and Titles have occurred in the courſe of the preceding Reſearch, are here given from the authorities which have offered themſelves. By the following Liſt it will appear that the BAND has always been thought a Poſt of high and diſtinguiſhed honour, not unworthy the acceptance of the firſt Nobility, and which, in one caſe only, (that of Sir Anthony Browne, who was a *Knight of the Garter*) has been conferred upon a COMMONER.

A LIST
OF THE
CAPTAINS
Of the BAND of
GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS,
From its *Eſtabliſhment*,
A. D. 1509 *.

K. HENRY VIII.

HENRY (*Bourchier*) EARL *of* ESSEX—The Firſt Captain. } See the preceding Memoir, p. 3.

* The Dates, for the moſt part, refer to the times when the CAPTAINS are found in Office, and not to the preciſe year of their reſpective Appointments.

Sir ANTHONY BROWNE, *Knt. of the Garter.* } Memoir, p. 25.

WILLIAM *(Parr)* EARL *of* ESSEX *. } Memoir, p. 26.

K. EDWARD VI.

WILLIAM *(Parr)* MARQUIS *of* NORTHAMPTON. } Memoir, p. 30.

K. PHILIP and Q. MARY.

WILLIAM *(Parr)* MARQUIS NORTHAMPTON†. } Memoir, p. 43.

THOMAS *(Ratcliffe)* EARL *of* SUSSEX. } Memoir, p. 106.

Q. ELIZABETH.

HENRY *(Cary)* LORD HUNSDON. } Memoir, p. 56.

GEORGE *(Cary)* LORD HUNSDON. } Memoir, p. 61.

K. JAMES I.

GEORGE *(Cary)* LORD HUNSDON. } Memoir, p. 49.

HENRY *(Percy)* E. *of* NORTHUMBERLAND ‡. } Memoir, p. 51.

* So created after the death of Henry Bourchier, the late Earl, whose ſole daughter he had married. [Vid. Memoir, p. 26, in a Note.] His Lordſhip was created Marquis of Northampton, in the firſt year of King Edward VI. [Vid. Note to Page 31 of the Memoir.]

† Attainted, 1553.

‡ Deprived, 1606.

THO-

THOMAS (*Howard*) EARL *of* SUFFOLK. [1615.]	MS. in Coll. Arm.
THEOPHILUS (*Howard*) LORD WALDEN*, [1616.]	MS. in the Library of the *Earl of Shelburne*.

K. CHARLES I.

THEOPHILUS (*Howard*) when EARL *of* SUFFOLK.	Memoir, p. 102.
WILLIAM (*Cecil*) EARL *of* SALISBURY.	Memoir, pp. 66, 67.
FRANCIS (*Leigh*) LORD DUNSMORE [1643†.]	Dugdale's Baronage.

K. CHARLES II.

HENRY (*Wentworth*) EARL *of* CLEVELAND.	Memoir, p. 76.
JOHN (*Belasis*) LORD BELLASIS *of Worlaby*.	Collins's Peerage.
THOMAS (*Belasis*) VISCOUNT FAUCONBERG [1672 ‡.]	Dugdale's Baronage.
WENTWORTH (*Dillon*) EARL *of* ROSCOMMON [1674.]	Peerage of Ireland.
ROBERT (*Leake*) EARL *of* SCARSDALE [1684.]	Collins's Peerage.

K. JAMES II.

THEOPHILUS (*Haſtings*) EARL *of* HUNTINGDON [1687.]	Collins's Peerage.

* He became *Earl of Suffolk*, 1626.

† Created *Earl of Chicheſter*, 1644.

‡ On the reſignation of his Uncle *Lord Belaſis of Worlaby*. [Dugdale and Collins.]

K. WIL.

K. WILLIAM III.

JOHN *(Lovelace)* LORD LOVELACE *.	Memoir, p. 79.
RALPH *(Montagu)* EARL *of* MONTAGU.	Q?
CHARLES *(Fitzroy)* DUKE *of* ST. ALBANS [1695].	Memoir, p. 88.

Q. ANNE.

HENRY *(Somerset)* DUKE *of* BEAUFORT, [1710.]	Collins's Peerage.

K. GEORGE I.

CHARLES *(Fitzroy)* DUKE *of* ST. ALBANS, [restored 1714 †.]	Collins's Peerage.
WILLIAM [*Cavendish*] MARQUIS *of* HARTINGTON [1726 ‡.]	Collins's Peerage.

K. GEORGE II.

RICHARD *(Boyle)* EARL *of* BURLINGTON, [1731.]	Collins's Peerage.
JOHN *(Montagu)* DUKE *of* MONTAGU, [1734.]	Memoir, p. 91.
CHARLES *(Paulet)* DUKE *of* BOLTON, [1740.]	Collins's Peerage.

* His *Lordship* died in the command, 1693. [Collins's Peerage.]
† His *Grace* died in the Command, 1726. [Collins's Peerage.]
‡ His *Lordship* became *Duke of Devonshire*, 1729.

ALLEN (*Bathurſt*) LORD BATHURST, [1742 *. } Collins's Peerage.

JOHN (*Hobart*) LORD HOBART, [1745 †.] } Collins's Peerage.

JOHN (*Berkeley*) LORD BERKELEY, *of* STRATTON [1756 ‡.] } Collins's Peerage.

K. GEORGE III.

GEORGE-HENRY (*Lee*) EARL *of* LICHFIELD, [1762 ‖.]

GEORGE (*Edgecumbe*) LORD EDGECUMBE, [1772 §.]

GEORGE (*Townſhend*) LORD DEFERRARS, Mar. 29, [1782 **.]

GEORGE-BUSSY (*Villiers*) E. *of* JERSEY, [May 14, 1783.]

GEORGE (*Townſhend*) LORD DE FERRARS, [Dec. 31, 1783 ††,]

now

EARL of LEICESTER, ‡‡.

* Created *Earl* Bathurſt, 1772.

† Created *Earl of Buckinghamſhire*, 1749.

‡ His *Lordſhip* reſigned, 1763.

‖ His *Lordſhip* died in the Command, 1772.

§ Created *Viſcount* Mount-Edgecumbe and Valletort, 1781.

** His *Lordſhip* reſigned the Command, 1783.

†† Re-appointed on the reſignation of the *Earl of Jerſey*.

‡‡ By Patent of Creation, 1784.

It is rather ſingular, as an obſervation of the moment, that the Earl of Leiceſter, the *preſent* CAPTAIN, is, as Baron Bourchier and Louvaine, the lineal Heir and Repreſentative of the Family of Henry Bourchier, Earl of Eſſex, the *firſt* CAPTAIN of the BAND.

APPENDIX. No. II.

SINCE the foregoing ſheets were printed off, I have been favoured with the uſe of an old Order-Book belonging to the Band which contains ſome Circumſtances that were hitherto unknown to me, and which otherwiſe would have been interwoven in their proper places. The moſt material matter before me is a Copy of the Orders of K. James II. which differ very widely from thoſe either of K. Charles I. or K. Charles II. We ſhall there find each GENTLEMAN PENSIONER again obliged to the finding of *Three* Great Horſes for himſelf and *Two* ſervants, with Arms and other military Habiliments. We there likewiſe meet with *Eighty* GENTLEMEN AT ARMS, or PENSIONERS *Extraordinary*, each of whom was to provide *One* Great Horſe and proper Accoutrements. Theſe Orders varying ſo much from any that have preceded, I here inſert a Copy of them, omitting ſuch Articles as are in words or ſubſtance the ſame as thoſe of the Reign of King Charles I. given in the Memoir, p. 69.

ORDERS of KING JAMES II. A. D. 1684.

I. *The Honourable* Band *of our* Gentlemen Penſioners *having the Honour to have daily acceſs into our* Preſence Chamber *as being our neareſt Guard and* principal military Corps of our Houſhold—*in which honourable* Band *our* Royal Father *in his late Civil Wars, as well as other* Princes *our Predeceſſors, having found great ſervice as well in the guard of their* Royal Perſons *as that it hath ſerved them as a Nurſery to breed up the Nobility and Gentry of the Realm in military Diſcipline, and fit them to be Commanders in their Wars—*

and

and We *having taken notice that ſeveral Perſons have been admitted into the ſaid* Band *not qualified as heretofore for that ſervice, which has rendered the ſaid* Band *leſs grateful to* Us; We *think fit and ordain*—THAT *henceforth none ſhall be admitted to be of the* Forty Gentlemen Penſioners in Ordinary *but the Sons of* Noblemen *or* Gentlemen *of* Blood, *or ſuch Perſons who by their valour and good conduct in the wars have diſtinguiſhed themſelves as Commiſſioned Officers in our forces, and who ſhall, for the term of ſix Months at the leaſt, have ſerved at their own proper charge as* Gentlemen at Arms, *commonly called* Gentlemen Penſioners Extraordinary *of the ſaid* Band.

2. *None that is or ſhall be a Servant, or retained to any Perſon or Perſons of any degree or condition whatſoever by* Oath, *Livery, Badge, Promiſe, or otherwiſe, but to* Us *only, ſhall be of the* Forty Gentlemen Penſioners *in* Ordinary, *or of the* Eighty Gentlemen at Arms *or* Penſioners Extraordinary *of the ſaid* Band.

3. *If* We *or the* Captain *of the ſaid* BAND *ſhall think fit to remove any or all of the* Forty Gentlemen Penſioners *in* Ordinary *now of the* Band, *thoſe who have bought their Places, that ſhall be ſo removed, ſhall receive* Half-pay *during their lives reſpectively; and thoſe that ſucceed in their places the other* Half: *and after their death the* Whole.

4. *The* Captain *of the* Band *ſhall have freedom and power of diſpoſing of the places of all the* Gentlemen Penſioners in Ordinary *and of all the* Gentlemen Penſioners Extraordinary *which ſhall at any time become vacant in as full and ample a manner as any* Captain *of the* Band *have enjoyed and practiſed the ſame before the laſt Eſtabliſhment in the year* 1670—*The ſaid Eſtabliſhment or any thing therein contained to the contrary notwithſtanding.*

5. *The ſame as in the Orders of K. Charles* I.

6. *The ſame &c.*

7. *The ſame &c.*

8. *The ſame &c.*

9. . . . . *And every* Gentleman Penſioner Extraordinary *ſo failing ſhall, for the firſt default, be obliged to perform* double Duty; *and for the ſecond default to perform* triple Duty; *and for the third default to be clearly expulſed and put out of the Room of a* Gentleman Penſioner Extraordinary.

10. *The ſame as in the Orders of K. Charles* I.

11. *The ſaid* Gentlemen Penſioners in Ordinary *being required by their Inſtitution every of them to be well and ſufficiently provided and furniſhed with his* Three Great Horſes *for himſelf and his Servants, with Arms and all other Habiliments to the ſame appertaining, the performance whereof our late Brother,* King Charles *the* Second, *was pleaſed to diſpenſe with till he ſhould think fit to require the ſame,*—It is OUR PLEASURE *that from henceforth the* Forty Gentlemen Penſioners in Ordinary, *and the* Eighty Gentlemen Penſioners Extraordinary, *ſhall each of them be ſufficiently furniſhed and provided with* one Great Horſe, *with a* Caſe of Piſtols, *a* Broad Sword, *an* Iron Back, Breaſt, *and* Head-piece, *with proper Furniture and Accoutrements to the ſame appertaining, to be ready therewith within two days Warning to be given them by their* Captain, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer, *on failure whereof the* Gentlemen Penſioners in Ordinary *to forfeit Ten days Wages for the firſt default, and for the ſecond default to forfeit a Month's Wages, and for the third default to be clearly expulſed and put out of the Room of a* Gentleman Penſioner in Ordinary, *and to loſe his whole Quarter's Wages. And every* Gentleman Penſioner Extraordinary *who ſhall fail to be furniſhed and provided with Horſe and Arms as aforeſaid, and to be ready therewith within Two Days notice to be given him by his* Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer, *ſhall be clearly expulſed and put out of the room of a* Gentleman Penſioner Extraordinary.

12. *Every*

12. *Every* Gentleman Penſioner in Ordinary *ſhall alſo ſufficiently furniſh and provide himſelf with* three *Great Horſes, with* Piſtols, Swords, Iron Backs, Breaſts, *and* Head-pieces, *with proper Furniture and Accoutrements to the ſame appertaining, for himſelf and* two *ſervants, whenever* We *ſhall think fit to require the ſame, to be ready therewith within fourteen days notice to be given unto them by their* Captain, Lieutenant, *or* Standard-bearer, *under the penalty for every default to be chequed or expulſed clearly, and put out of the room of a* Gentleman Penſioner, *as aforementioned.*

13. *The ſame as in the Orders of K. Charles* I.

14. *In ſubſtance the ſame as in the Orders of K. Charles* I.

15. *The* Captain *of the* Band *ſhall have a due regard that ſuch* Gentlemen Penſioners in Ordinary, *and* Gentlemen Penſioners Extraordinary, *whom he ſhall appoint to do the duty of* Corporals, Sub-Corporals, File-leaders, *and* Adjutants *to the* Band, *ſhall henceforth always be ſuch of the* Gentlemen *as ſhall have the moſt knowledge and experience in military diſcipline, without having regard to their ſeniority of admiſſion into the* Band.

16. *The Habits, Arms, and Cloathing of the* Gentlemen Penſioners in Ordinary, *and of the* Gentlemen at Arms *or* Penſioners Extraordinary, *ſhall be ſuch as* We *or their* Captain *ſhall appoint.*

17. *The ſame as in the Orders of K. Charles* I.

18. *The* Trumpeters *of* Our Houſhold *attending on the ſaid* Band *when they are under Arms, ſhall, on every ſuch attendance, henceforth be mounted upon* white Horſes.

19. *The accuſtomed Oaths ſhall be taken by every* Gentleman Penſioner *in* Ordinary *and by every* Gentleman at Arms *or* Penſioner Extraordinary, *at their Admiſſion into the* Band.

20. *The ſame as in the Orders of K. Charles* I.

21. *The* Gentlemen Penſioners in Ordinary, *and the* Gentlemen at Arms, *or* Penſioners Extraordinary *of the ſaid* Band, *ſhall be advanced to be* Commiſſioned Officers *in our* Army, *preferably to all other perſons whatſoever.*

Given at our Court at Whitehall, the Tenth Day of February, 1684, *in firſt Year of* Our *Reign.*

By his MAJESTY's *Command.*

APPENDIX. No. III.

ADDITIONS and CORRECTIONS.

MEMOIR. p. 57.

[In the Note.]

——"*This letter is printed in Dr. Chamberlayne's Preſent* "*States, viz.* 1737 *and* 1748; *but I have never been able to find* "*the Original or any other Copy of it.*"

In the old Order-Book (mentioned in the Appendix, No. I.) there is a tranſcript of the letter above-given; but it is not there ſaid from whence it was taken.

MEMOIR. p. 76.

——"*The* BAND *was reduced from* Fifty *to* Forty. *This* "*Dr. Chamberlayne tells us took place between the years* 1672 *and* "1674."

The point in queſtion is aſcertained by the following extract from a Declaration of K. Charles II. which iſſued in the year 1670 *.

"CHARLES R.

"WE having taken notice that ſome Gentlemen of *our* BAND "of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS have been admitted into the "ſaid BAND, not qualified as heretofore for that ſervice, which "hath rendered the ſaid BAND leſs grateful to Us;—for the pre-

* Old Order-Book.

"vention

" vention of the ſame for the time to come, WE do hereby de-
" clare, that the ſaid BAND of PENSIONERS now conſiſting of
" *Fifty* ſhall be reduced to *Forty* that ſhall be continued. And
" if WE ſhall think fit to remove any or all of thoſe *Forty* that
" ſhall be continued, thoſe that ſhall be ſo removed ſhall re-
" ceive *Half-pay* during their lives reſpectively, and thoſe that
" ſhall ſucceed in their places the other *Half*, and after their
" deaths the *Whole*."

It ſhould be obſerved here, in juſtice to the Crown, that the *Ten* GENTLEMEN, then diſcharged, were not totally neglected; for though the KING, when this reduction was made in the number of the *Band*, had enlarged the Pay of all the Officers reſpectively, and had advanced that of each of the *Forty* GENTLEMEN, to 100*l.* per annum: yet his Majeſty, not to diſmiſs the *Ten* GENTLEMEN too unhandſomely (who, we may equitably ſuppoſe, did not purchaſe their places) was pleaſed to aſſign to each of them a ſum of money, equal to the pay of a year and an half, to be levied upon the ſtanding Corps. The above-cited Declaration thereupon runs thus—" That for the ſatisfac-
" tion of the *Ten* [Gentlemen] who quite leave the Band, the
" remaining *Forty*, and the *Officers*, ſhall contribute out of their
" firſt year's Wages, which ſhall be paid according to this new
" Eſtabliſhment, the ſum of 1,500*l.*---and that WE will order
" the payment of their Arrears in the firſt place.

" Given under our Signet and Sign Manual, at our Court
" at Whitehall, the 17th day of March, 1670.

" By his MAJESTY's Command,

" ARLINGTON."

MEMOIR.

MEMOIR. p. 77.

——"*If Dr. Chamberlayne's account be the truth (and there* "*is no reaſon to controvert it) the Salaries both of the* Officers *and* "Gentlemen *aroſe to the preſent Standard, under K.* JAMES [*the* "*Second.*"]

I thought that Dr. Chamberlayne might have been relied upon in a circumſtance wherein he had an opportunity of receiving perſonal information, and in a caſe which lay peculiarly within the province of a man who profeſſedly undertook to give the ſtate of the Court, and its revolutions, from time to time. When a body of Gentlemen, ſo well known, and in ſo reſpectable a line of character, underwent a change, in number as well as ſalary, it became almoſt a matter of publick obſervation, and, I preſume, did not eſcape the notice, if it did not incur the cenſure, of the world: but Dr. Chamberlayne has wandered ſo far from the truth that the event took place two years, at leaſt, before he heard of it*. Let us revert to the Declaration of K. Charles II. (1670) before cited, and we ſhall there find that the reduction of the *Band* in point of number, and the advancement of the Salaries, was the operation of the ſame moment, and that the latter was the reſult of the former. *Ten* GENTLEMEN of the *Band* had been diſcharged, and the King was thereby enabled, by ſuch reduction, to enlarge the Pay of thoſe *Gentlemen* who remained, as well as of the *Officers*. Thus the Declaration (of the year 1670) ſpecifies that from thenceforth the ſeveral Wages of the *Band* ſhould be as follows, viz. to the CAPTAIN 1,000*l.*---To the *Lieutenant* 500*l.*---To the *Standard-Bearer* 310*l.*---To the *Forty Gentlemen* (in the groſs) 4,000*l.*---

* See his Preſent-State of the Year 1672, where the GENTLEMEN are given, by name, *Fifty* in number.

To the *Clerk of the Cheque*, 120*l.*---and to the *Gentleman-Harbinger*, 70*l.* per annum. The Royal intention (as appears from another Clauſe in the above Declaration) was to equalize the Pay of the *Officers* of the *Band* of *Penſioners* with that of the correſponding *Officers* in the *Corps* of the *Yeomen of the Guard*, without enlarging the current expence allotted to the *Band*; for the words run, that the Wages of the Officers ſhould "be made "equal to the Pay of the *Officers* of the *Yeomen of our Guard*, "which WE will ſhall be done without increaſing the annual "Charge of *Six Thouſand Pounds*, which is the ancient Wages "and Eſtabliſhment of the whole BAND *."

MEMOIR. p. 95.

[In the Note.]

——"*He adds* [*Chamberlayne*] *that none ſhall be admitted into* "*the* Band *except they ſhall have ſerved at their own Charge, for* "*ſix months at leaſt, as* Gentlemen at Arms, *or* Penſioners Extra-"ordinary.----*This circumſtance, for want of information, I leave* "*doubtful.*"

See the Orders of K. James II. (given in the Appendix, No. II. Art. 1.) where it is expreſsly ſaid that none ſhall be admitted into the Band as GENTLEMEN *in Ordinary*, who have not "ſerved for the term of ſix months at the leaſt, *at their own* "*Charge*, as GENTLEMEN AT ARMS, commonly called, GEN-"TLEMEN PENSIONERS *Extraordinary* of the BAND." By the words "commonly called" one is induced to ſuppoſe that the GENTLEMEN *Extraordinary* were added by K. CHARLES II. though I have ſeen nothing to warrant it. K. JAMES II. if this addition was his own act, ſeems to have been very rapid in making the Appointment; for he aſcended the Throne,

* See the Memoir in a note to p. 64.

Feb. 6, 1684, N. S. and the Orders referred to are dated the 10th of that Month in the ſame Year. K. JAMES II. it is well known, was ſollicitous to have a very ſplendid Coronation, and ſuch it was:---but the Ceremony was no ſooner performed than the Houſhold Eſtabliſhment ſuffered a ſevere Reduction, and it is to be ſuſpected, though the BAND of the *Forty* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS *in Ordinary* ſtood entire, that the GENTLEMEN *Extraordinary* might forſake their expectations, and withdraw themſelves from a diſcouraging ſervice, attended with actual and immediate Charges. The chance, humanly ſpeaking, was unequal, the *Extra*-GENTLEMEN being *Eighty* in number, dependent for Preferment and Pay upon contingent Vacancies in a Body of *Forty* *.

The GENTLEMEN *Extraordinary* do not appear, from Sandford's account of the Coronation of K. James II. to have made a part of the Proceſſion, ſo that there is reaſon to doubt whether they even exiſted at the time of the Coronation, and might not all reſign previous to that Ceremony, to avoid the neceſſary concomitant Expences †.

* Orders of K. James II. Art. 11. See Appendix, No. II.

† The *Forty* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS *in Ordinary*, who attended the Coronation, are mentioned by name in Sandford. *Twenty* eſcorted the KING, and *Twenty* the QUEEN, flanking the Canopies. The Coronation took place on the 23d of April after the Acceſſion.

MEMOIR, p. 96.

——— "*It has been cuſtomary for many Years paſt to purchaſe the Office or Place of a private* Gentleman *of the* Band *of* Penſioners, *and to ſell the ſame* (with the Approbation of the CAPTAIN) *as occaſion offered.*"

It is here implied, that in caſe of Death, the Diſpoſition of the vacant Poſt is in the Breaſt of the CAPTAIN, and ſuch it is known to be; every Transfer, from one Man to another, being a Matter of Indulgence, which he is at liberty to grant or refuſe at pleaſure. As to the Patronage of the BAND, if I may ſo call it, of which, for want of Authority, I have hitherto ſuggeſted nothing, I have now a Sanction for adding what follows.

By the above-given Order, of the 18th of March, 1670, the KING reſumes to himſelf the Appointment of the *whole* BAND, which previouſly had been lodged with the CAPTAIN: but in the Year 1677, a Declaration now before me (extracted from the old Order-Book) inveſts the then CAPTAIN *(the Earl of Roſcommon)* with the like power as his Predeceſſors had, in caſes of Vacancies by Death, before the Year 1670; with proviſion only that on every Change indiſcriminately the *Gentlemen*, thenceforth intended for Admiſſion into the BAND, ſhould be firſt perſonally brought to the KING for his Approbation. This Power was again unreſervedly conferred upon the CAPTAIN by the Orders of King James II. (Art. 4.) and, as far as my preſent Information goes, has never been revoked. It is farther eſtabliſhed by the Caſe which came in Queſtion between *Lord Lovelace* and ſome diſcarded *Gentlemen* at the *Revolution*, when the CAPTAIN's Power was confirmed by the KING and COUNCIL; reſerving

 only,

only, in future, that every *Gentleman*, before his Admiſſion, ſhould be preſented to his MAJESTY for his Concurrence *.

MEMOIR, p. 99.

—— "*The preſent* UNIFORM *is* ..... *entirely at the Pleaſure* "*of the* CAPTAIN, *with the* KING's *Approbation.*"

The Orders of King James II. 1684 (Art. 16.) confirm this.

MEMOIR, p. 100.

—— "*The* CAPTAIN *is ſworn into his Poſt by the* LORD CHAMBERLAIN, in perſon, *by virtue of the* KING's *Warrant.*"

In the above-mentioned old Order-Book there are ſome Minutes left by *Thomas Stapley, Eſq*; who was *Clerk of the Cheque* to the BAND in the Reign of King CHARLES I. and dated 1633; wherein he ſays, that antecedent to that Reign the CAPTAIN of the BAND had not any *Oath* of *Office* adminiſtered to him: but that, after he was nominated by the KING, he took poſſeſſion of the *Poſt* with a little Ceremonial, which at once notified the SOVEREIGN's Pleaſure, and carried Dignity with it in the Eyes of the Court and the Publick.

Mr. Stapley ſpeaks in the third Perſon, and theſe are his Words, with which I ſhall cloſe this long Detail.—— "The "CAPTAIN of the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS never "uſed to take any *Oath*; for he [Stapley] knew *Five* CAPTAINS "of the ſaid BAND, viz. *Henry Lord Hunſdon—George Lord Hunſdon* "—The *Earl* of *Northumberland—Thomas Earl* of *Suffolk*—and "*Theophilus Lord Walden*; yet he never knew nor heard that any "of the ſaid CAPTAINS were ſworn:——but their Manner was,

* See the Memoir, p. 86.

"when

" when the QUEEN or KING gave any of them the Place of " CAPTAIN, to ſend for the *Clerk of the Cheque*, and call for a " *Roll*, and ſuch of the BAND as were *in Quarter*, to acquaint " them with the KING's Pleaſure to make him CAPTAIN:—— " *Whereupon*, the next Sunday following, ſuch of the *Gen-* " *tlemen*, as were in Town, attended the CAPTAIN from his " Lodging to the *Preſence-Chamber*, whereby Notice was taken, " that the KING had beſtowed the Place of CAPTAIN upon " him."

FINIS.

CURIALIA:

OR

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT

OF

SOME BRANCHES

OF THE

ROYAL HOUSHOLD, &c. &c.

PART III.

CONTAINING

A MEMOIR

ADDRESSED TO THE

Preſident of the Society of Antiquaries, London;

RESPECTING the KING's BODY-GUARD OF YEOMEN OF HIS GUARD,

FROM ITS INSTITUTION, A.D. 1485.

By SAMUEL PEGGE, ESQ.

LONDON,

Printed by J. NICHOLS, Printer to the SOCIETY of ANTIQUARIES;
And ſold by B. WHITE and Son, at Horace's Head, in Fleet ſtreet;
J. ROBSON, New Bond ſtreet; LEIGH and SOTHEBY, York-ſtreet,
Covent-Garden; and T. PAYNE, junior, Mews Gate.

MDCCXCI.

CURIALIA:

OR,

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT, &c.

PART III.

A MEMOIR

Respecting the KING'S BODY GUARD

OF

YEOMEN OF HIS GUARD.

From it's Institution 1485 *.

To the President of the Society of Antiquaries, London †.

SIR,

CONFORMABLY to my promise in the Introduction to the Second Part of this Work, I here bring forward an account of HIS MAJESTY'S YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, similar to that which I have given to the Society, and the Publick, of

* Read, in substance, at the Society of Antiquaries July 3, 1783—now much augmented, and brought down to the present time.

† The Dean of Exeter.

the KING's *Honourable Band of* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, and ſhall proceed without further Preface or Apology.

The Corps before us then, Sir, is well known to have been erected by K. Henry VII. at his Coronation (1485) under the pretext of giving an uncommon eclat to that Ceremony. Several Writers inſinuate that the King form'd this new *Guard* on the Model of the French Court; but none diſguiſe the motive—the ſecurity of his Perſon. He claim'd the Crown by various Titles, but it was after a long train of civil commotions, and when he was by no means certain that the Storm had ſubſided. In order to give this *Body Guard* an oſtenſible Appearance of mere State, the King, as Lord Verulam inſinuates, wiſhed "that "it might be thought to be rather a matter of Dignity (after the "Imitation of what he had ſeen abroad) than any matter of "Diffidence appropriate to his own caſe; and he made it to be "underſtood for an ordinance not temporary, but to hold "in ſucceſſion for ever*." After this, his Lordſhip is free enough to ſuggeſt further as to the motive that—"the Crown "upon the King's Head put perils into his Thoughts†."

It is ſaid by ſome Writers that the Nation was at the time jealous of this Eſtabliſhment, and that the King was reſtrained, and only permitted to conſtitute this Corps as a Protection of his Perſon, under a condition that it ſhould not encreaſe to an Army. It was to be a State and Ornament to the Crown, not a Terror to the Subject‡.

* Hiſt. of the Reign of K. Hen. VII. p. 7.

† Idem.

‡ Dr. Gilbert Stuart's View of Society in Europe, p. 137. 4to. It is not improbable that the meaſure was deviſed by Richard Fox (at length Bp. of Wincheſter), who, Lord Verulam tells us, was expert at contriving matters of State and Parade,—was high in the King's confidence,—and one of his warmeſt Adherents.

Be

Be theſe things as they may, the original Complement of this Body was, according to the above-mentioned noble Writer, to conſiſt of *Fifty* ARCHERS, under the Command of a CAPTAIN, with the Title of YEOMEN *of the* GUARD.

The term *Yeomen* is here to be underſtood both with regard to their natural Rank in Society, and to the ſubordination of Officers on the Royal Eſtabliſhment, where almoſt every Claſs had (among other Branches) a *Serjeant*, a *Gentleman*, and a *Yeoman*: and Writers agree that this Corps was expreſſly to be compoſed of the Prime of thoſe Perſons who are next below the Order of *Gentry* *. According to Holinſhed, theſe Men were to be "hardy, ſtrong, and active" in themſelves; and, as to their Functions, were "to give daily Attendance upon the KING's Perſon."

The following is the Account given by Hall the Chronicler of the Inſtitution of this Corps. "Theſe thynges" (meaning the Appointment of the Council and the Marriage with the Princeſs Elizabeth) "thus paſſed, albeit that apparauntly all thynges "ſeemēd to be reduced to a good poynte, and ſet in a Staye, "Kyng Henry being made wyſe and expert wyth Troubles "and Myſchiefes before paſſt, remembred yt was Wiſdome to "feare and provide for the crafty Wyles and lurking Trappes "of his ſecret Enemyes.——Wherefore, for the ſave-guarde "and Preſervation of his awne Body, he conſtituted and or-"deyned a certain Nombre as well of good *Archers*, as of di-"verſe other Perſons, being hardy, ſtronge, and of Agilitie, "to geve dailye Attendance on his Perſon, whom he named

* Dr. Fuller, in his quaint way of expreſſing himſelf, ſays that—a *Yeoman* is a *Gentleman* in the *Ore*, whom the next Generation may ſee *refined*. [Holy and Prophane State, ch. 18.] It is to be preſumed that, as being in the Royal Service, theſe *Yeomen* had Precedence of all the reſt of the Yeomanry in the Kingdom.

"YEOMEN *of his* GARDE; which Preſident [Precedent] Men "thought that he learned of the French Kyng when he was "in Fraunce; for Men remembre not any Kyng of Eng- "land before that tyme which uſed ſuch a Furnyture of "daily Souldyours." Such a Novelty muſt doubtleſs ſtrike the publick Eye very forcibly, and excite no ſmall degree of Admiration *!

The French Model, here alluded to, ſeems to have been a *Body* of *Archers* which was formed into a ſeparate Guard by Louis XI, A. D. 1475. The Caſe was thus.

The grand Guard of the *Becs de Corbin*, or *the Hundred Gentlemen*, had each *Two Archers* in his ſuite till the above Period, when the King detached from them the Two Hundred *Archers*, and erected them into a diſtinct Corps, as an inferior eſtabliſhment which he called the Leſſer Guard—"la petite Garde de ſon Corps †." It is allowed by all Hiſtorians that K. Henry

* Hall and Polydore Vergil agree in ſubſtance as to this Eſtabliſhment, and ſeem almoſt to have compared Notes; for one can hardly call it tranſlating, as they were concurrent Writers. Polydore Vergil publiſhed his Hiſtory 1533. Hall's Chronicle was a poſthumous Work, compiled by himſelf only to the Year 1532; though he left Notes for a Continuation to 1546, digeſted and publiſhed by Grafton after Hall's Death, which happened in the following Year 1547.

† Pere Daniel Hiſt. de la Milice Françoiſe, Tom. II. p. 102. Montfaucon calls them the *Six-Score* Archers; ſo that we may imagine they were not preſerved to the full when formed into a ſeparate Body. He derives his Authority from the Monumental Inſcription of *Guillaume de May*, there call'd "Capitaine de "*Six Vingts* Archers du Roi." He died 1480. What principally tempts me to inſiſt on this particular is, that Montfaucon gives a Drawing of that Captain in his Habit de Function taken from the Monument, where he appears in Armour, with a *Long-Bow* in his Right Hand, and a *Sword* and *Dagger* by his Sides, his *Quiver* and *Helmet* lying at his Feet. [Montf. Monumens de la Monarchie Françoiſe, Tom. III. plate 69.] L'Etat de la France, of the Year 1682, ſays that *Louis de Graville* was the firſt Captain of theſe Archers thus re-formed 1475, ſo that one would preſume, by compariſon of dates, that *Guillaume de May* was the Second Captain.

VII. was of a narrow and parſimonious Diſpoſition, which might perhaps prompt him to adopt the ſecondary French Guard of *Archers*, in the quality of *Yeomen*, inſtead of the more ſplendid Troup of *Gentlemen*. This was reſerved for the ſumptuous ſpirit of his Son K. Henry VIII. who inſtituted the *Band of* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, preſerving at the ſame time the Corps of YEOMEN *of his* GUARD. We muſt here, Sir, already take leave of the YEOMEN as to the Reign of K. Hen. VII. in which I find no particulars concerning them, except that, as has been obſerved in the firſt part of this Work, they bore the Body of their Founder to his Tomb in the new Chapel which he had erected at the Eaſt End of the Abbey of Weſtminſter *.

This Eſtabliſhment, however, was not perfectly new with us, but rather a forgotten Ornament of our Court; for it appears from the Houſhold Book of K. Edward IV. (the Domus Regis Angliæ) that *Archers* compoſed part of the Royal Retinue in the Reign of K. Edward the Third, who had Twenty-four *Archers*,

* Diſſertation, II. p. 45. I ſhall diſmiſs this Reign with the following Circumſtance.

In the North Chancel of the Church of Boughton under Blean in Kent lies buried Thomas Hawkins, who liv'd to the Age of 101 Years, and died 1587. On his Monument, among others, are the following Lines:

" King Henry the Eight I ſerv'd, which won me fame,
" Who was to me a gracious Prince allwaies
" And made me well to ſpend my aged Daies.
" My Stature high, my Body hugge and ſtrong
" Excelling all that lived in mine Age."

My reaſon for mentioning ſuch a matter is to overthrow a Tradition of the Neighbourhood, that this Man was the firſt, or at leaſt one of the firſt, *Yeomen* appointed by K. Hen. VII. which cannot be the Truth; for the Corps was embodied 1485, and Hawkins, by his own monumental account, was born 1486. He might poſſibly be one of thoſe *Yeomen* who, as we ſhall ſee hereafter, were

Archers, as an Avant-Garde, running in pairs before him whenever he went abroad *.

The Body of the YEOMEN does not ſeem to have had any ſuperior Officer at their Inſtitution, except a CAPTAIN, as mention'd by Lord Verulam, to whom was added in the next Reign a CLERK *of the* CHEQUE: for the other Officers were not introduced till after the Reſtoration. It is a little ſingular, that the Poſt of CAPTAIN appears in the two following Reigns to have been frequently held with the *Vice-Chamberlainſhip*, which two Offices are at this Day very incompatible. Sir Anthony Wingfield is found in both theſe Employments in the 31ſt Year of K. Henry VIII †. In the Reign of K. Edward VI. Sir Thomas D'Arcy held them together ‡; as did afterwards Sir John Gates §, Sir Henry Bedingfield ||, and Sir Chriſtopher Hatton **. Other Offices have been held in Conjunction with it, as the Lieutenancy of the Tower in the Caſe of Sir Hugh Vaughan, temp. Hen. VII. [v. Appendix.] Sir Walter Raleigh, when CAPTAIN, held for ſome time at leaſt, the Office of a

were advanced in Pay upon a Reduction of their Number 1526, when Hawkins would have been Forty Years of Age, and, if he died in Office, might have partaken of this Enlargement of the ſtipend upwards of Sixty Years, which ſeems ſufficient to explain the Third Line above-cited.

* Bibl. Harl. N° 642. [Article Yeomen of the Crown.] Theſe 24 Archers, the Account ſays, had an Allowance of Shoes and Stockings from the King. It appears from an Eſtabliſhment by K. Edw. III. which I have ſeen, that ſeveral other Officers, whoſe buſineſs lay without-doors, ſuch as *Meſſengers*, *Hunters*, *Falconers*, &c. had the ſame things provided by the King's Wardrobe, or a Compoſition of *Three Shillings* and *Eight Pence* per Annum each in lieu of them. Theſe Liveries were call'd *Calciaturæ*.

† Goodwin's Annals. Weever's Fun. Mon. p. 756.

‡ Stowe's Chronicle.

§ King Edward's Journal, printed in the 2d. vol. of Burnet's Hiſt. of the Reformation.

|| Strype's Memorials, III. p. 387.

** Gordon's Lives.

Gentleman

Gentleman of the Privy Chamber, when it was a poſt of real Attendance and Emolument *.

I do not obſerve any Change in the *Corps* during the Reign of the Inſtitutor, though, like moſt other parts of the Houſhold, the number was afterwards often enlarged, and as often retrenched.

In the following Reign of K. Henry VIII. there were, beſides the ordinary YEOMEN, *Four* YEOMEN-USHERS, who officiated, as other *Uſhers* did, in keeping the Door of the *Chamber*, viz. the *Great Chamber*, to which they were appointed, and were ſtyled YEOMEN USHERS of *The Chamber*, having the Charge of preſerving Order in that Room which continues to be their Office at this Day †. We may trace theſe *Four* YEOMEN-USHERS, whoſe number was afterwards enlarged, as high as the Reign of K. Edw. IV. (A. D. 1478.), and at whoſe Funeral alſo they are found (inter alios) carrying Torches ‡. As Door-keepers, or Uſhers (Oſtiarii) they attended at the Chriſtening of K. Edw. VI. when we are told—"*Two* YEOMEN-USHERS kept the "Chapell Dore next the Porche §."

At what time theſe *Uſhers* were annexed to the YEOMEN of the GUARD I do not preciſely diſcover; but they are mentioned as a part of the main Body in the Reign before us ‖. The *Uſhers*, as I have ſuggeſted, had exiſted long before the Erection of this Corps, and I conceive them to have been originally a part of a Body of Men of very Old Standing, call'd YEOMEN

* Gordon's Lives.

† Eltham Statutes. This *Chamber* will be particularly adverted to hereafter in this Memoir.

‡ Leland's Collectanea, in the Additions.

§ Idem.

‖ See the Orders for the Diminution and Reformation of the Guard, poſtea.

of

of the CROWN, as will appear by the following Extract from the Houſhold of K. Edw. IV. viz.

"YEOMEN *of the* CROWN xxiiii. moſt ſeemly Perſons, "cleanly, and ſtrongeſt Archers, honeſt of Condition and of "Behaviour, bold Men, choſen and tried out of every Lord's "Houſe in England for their Cunning and Virtue. Thereof "one to be *Yeoman* of the *Robes*, another to be *Yeoman* of the "*Wardrobe* of *Beds* in the Houſhold: other Two be *Yeomen* "of *The Chamber*."

The reſt of theſe *Yeomen* of the *Crown* were appropriated in the Reign of K. Edw. IV—one to be of the *Stole*—another to the *Armory*—another to the King's *Bows*—another to the King's *Books*—another to the *Dogs* for the *Bow*—and the remainder were open to occaſional Employments. Thus in the laſt-mentioned Reign they were ſent on Meſſages by the *Lord Chamberlain*; and in that of K. Rich. III. even by the KING himſelf—for when the Duke of Buckingham had taken Arms againſt Richard, the King ſent a Letter to the City of York, requiring Aſſiſtance, by a *Yeoman* of the *Crown* *.

The Pay of all the *Yeomen* of the *Crown* was equally Three Pence per diem, with Cloathing both Winter and Summer, or by Commutation, 18 Shillings for each Half Year; beſides which, the YEOMEN USHERS had their Watching-Cloathing. Thoſe who watched are ordered to be girt with their Swords, or with other Weapons and Harneſs (or Armour), poſſibly Breaſt-plates or Cuiraſſes about them. The Office of *Yeoman* of the *Crown* exiſted likewiſe long after the Eſtabliſhment of the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, as will be ſeen preſently from what I ſhall offer from the Eltham Statutes of the Year 1526.

* Drake's Eboracum, p. 118.

But

But to return, Sir, to the main Body, K. Hen. VIII. ſeems to have enlarged or diminiſhed the Corps of YEOMEN in general, accordingly as Circumſtances, or (I may ſay) Exigencies, required.

He had erected, as we have ſeen, another Body under the Title of *Spears*, now called *The Band of* GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS: but nevertheleſs he maintained this his Father's Body Guard of YEOMEN in a ſuperb manner, and frequently made a further uſe of them than his Father did, who never ſeems to have detached them from his Perſon. There were obvious Reaſons for both. K. Henry VII. had no other Body Guard, except the *Serjeants at Arms*, who were neither ſufficiently numerous or effective againſt open or violent Attacks; while K. Henry VIII. had, in addition to theſe two, his *Gentlemen Penſioners* in daily Attendance, and in Harneſs (as the term was) conſtantly ſtationed ſtill nearer his Perſon.

Moſt Writers agree, as has been obſerved, that the original Number of the YEOMEN was *Fifty*: but in this Reign it appears to have been indefinite, ſeldom to be found the ſame from one diſcernible period to another. The ſmalleſt Complement, however, ſeems, not long after the acceſſion, to have been *Two Hundred*, of which number *One Hundred* were to have Horſes *.

K. Henry VIII., on the Demiſe of his Father (Ap. 22, 1509), retired to the Tower for ſome time, that he might be more pri-

* Vide poſtea. The Figure of a YEOMAN *of the* GUARD *on Horſeback*, with the *Roſe* on his Breaſt, and a *Bow* in his Hand, is very diſtinguiſhable in the French Print of the Interview of Francis I. and Hen. VIII. given by Montfaucon in his Monumens de la Monarchie Françoiſe. A Print of a YEOMAN *on Horſeback*, arm'd with the *Carbine* or *Arquebus*, which took place afterwards, when ſmall Fire-Arms had obtain'd, may be ſeen in a Publication, entituled, "Diverſarum Gentium Armatura Equeſtris," publiſhed at Amſterdam 1617. Capt. Groſe has re-engrav'd it in his Hiſtory of the Engliſh Army.

vate, and have Leiſure to ſettle an Adminiſtration without Interruption. There he remained ſeveral Months. During that time, the Orders given below in a Note, which regard the Tower both as a Palace and a Garriſon, were iſſued, principally for the Regulation of this his Body-Guard in their Duty and Attendances, with ſevere Penalties for Neglect *.

* "Signed
"HENRY R.

"Hereafter followeth the Articles and Ordinances that the KING's Grace "hath ordained and eſtabliſhed the 25th day of the month of July the firſt "Year of his Reign, which his ſaid Grace hath charged and commanded "*Sir Thomas Lovell** and *Sir Richard Cholmley*†, *Knights*, and all the YEOMEN "*of his* GARDE, and all other *Soldiers* that be appointed to give their daily "Attendance within the *Tower of London*, for the ſure keeping of the ſame, "to obſerve and keep upon Pains following.

"Firſt, that none of the ſaid YEOMEN ne *Soldiers*, ſo appointed, ſhall de- "part out of the ſaid *Tower of London* without Licenſe of *Sir Thomas Lovell* and "*Sir Richard Cholmley*, *Knts.* or their Deputy, upon pain of Forfeiture of Twelve "Pence for the firſt Default, and the Second Default Three Shillings, the "third Default his Body to be impriſoned three Days; and if he make Default "the Fourth Time, to loſe his Room for ever, and his Body to be puniſhed at "the King's Pleaſure.

"Item, the ſaid *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley*, or his Deputy, ſhall "not give Licenſe to none of the ſaid YEOMEN or *Soldiers* ſo appointed, to depart "out of the ſaid *Tower*, but that they be ſure that there ſhall be remaining within "the ſaid *Tower* the Three Parts or more of the ſaid YEOMEN, and in like wiſe "of all other *Soldiers*, *Gunners*, and *Artificers*; and this order to be kept by the "ſaid *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley*, or his Deputy, for the ſure "keeping of the ſaid *Tower*, upon pain of the KING's Diſpleaſure.

"Item, the ſaid *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley*, or his Deputy, ſhall "ſurely ſee that there be every day *Four* of the YEOMEN, and as many of the ſaid "*Soldiers*, *Gunners*, and *Artificers*, ſurely to keep the Gate of the ſaid *Tower*, that "is to ſay, from the firſt opening of the Gate till the laſt ſhutting. Alſo that "every of them ſo appointed, and all other YEOMEN and *Soldiers*, bear in

* Conſtable of the Tower. [Lord Herbert].

† Lieutenant of the Tower. [Collins's Peerage. Art. Earl of Cholmondeley].

their

The firſt occaſion which offers of obſerving the YEOMEN at this Period, as an active Body in a military Line, is when K. Henry ſet off to be preſent at the Siege of Terouenne (1513), at which time, Hall tells us, he was accompanied with many Noble-men

" their Hands an *Halbert* or a *Bill* whereſoever they go within the ſaid *Tower*, " thus to be ordered by the ſaid *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley*, or " his Deputy, upon pain aboveſaid *.

" Item, the ſaid YEOMEN and all other *Soldiers*, ſo appointed for the keeping " of the Gate, ſhall not depart from the ſaid Gate without Licenſe of the ſaid *Sir* " *Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley*, or his Deputy; ne ſuffer any man, wo- " man, or child, not dwelling within the ſaid *Tower*, to enter within the ſame " without Licenſe of the ſaid *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley*, or his " Deputy, during the time of their waiting at the Gate, except they know them " well, and that the cauſe of their coming thither be good and needful, upon " pain of Impriſonment during the pleaſure of the ſaid *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir* " *Richard Cholmley*, and loſing of Twelve Pence for every ſuch Default.

" Item, the ſaid YEOMEN, and other *Soldiers*, *Gunners*, and *Artificers*, ſo ap- " pointed, ſhall truly keep their Night-Watch and Ward as the ſaid *Sir Thomas* " *Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley*, or his Deputy, ſhall appoint and command " them to do, upon pain of their Bodies to be impriſoned at the Will of the ſaid " *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley*, and loſing Twelve Pence for the " Firſt Offence, and the Second Offence to looſe Twenty Pence, and two Days " his Body in Priſon; and he that thirdly offendeth ſhall loſe his Room, and his " Body to be puniſhed at the KING's Pleaſure.

" Alſo, the ſaid YEOMEN, *Clerk of the Ordinance*, *Soldiers*, *Bowyers*, and all other " *Artificers*, and *Gunners*, ſhall be ordered as well in their Attendance, as in all " other Cauſes concerning their Rooms, as the foreſaid *Sir Thomas Lovell* and " *Sir Richard Cholmley* ſhall command them.

" And if it ſhall fortune any of the ſaid Rooms to fall void, the ſaid *Sir Thomas* " *Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley* ſhall, as ſoon as he may, certify the KING's " Grace thereof that his Grace may provide another in his Room.

" Alſo, the Said *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley* ſhall ſee that every " of the ſaid YEOMEN *of the Garde*, and all other *Soldiers* and *Gunners*, and *Arti-* " *ficers*, ſo appointed, have their *Harneſs* for their Bodies within the *Tower*, as it " appertaineth for the Surety of every of them, and alſo for the ſure keeping of the

* They are called *Bill-men* by Sir Thomas More [See his Life].

men and "Six Hundred *Archers* of his *Garde* al in white Gab-
"berdines and Cappes*."

The Battle of Spurs, where the King commanded, intervened between his Arrival in France and the Surrender of Terouenne, whereat doubtleſs the *Yeomen* were preſent among the reſt of the Archers. The Victory was ſo complete, that the French themſelves give it that deriſional Title, "forſomuche "[ſays Holinſhed] as they, inſteade of *Sworde* and *Launce*, uſed "their *Spurres* with all might and main to pricke forthe their "Horſes to gette out of Daunger".

In the ſame Year, when Tournay fell into the King's Hands, he left among other Forces, for its Preſervation, four hundred *Archers* of his *Guard*†; and in the following Year a ſtrong Petition and Remonſtrance was ſent by theſe *Archers*, who were called *Conſtables* of *Tournay*, to the Cardinal (Wolſey) and the Council, repreſenting a hardſhip which threatened them.

They ſtyle themſelves YEOMEN *of the* KING'S *moſt honourable* GUARD *and* CONSTABLES *of* TOURNAY; and in their Letter

"ſaid *Tower*. And the ſaid *Sir Thomas Lovell* and *Sir Richard Cholmley* ſhall ſee
"this to be done or ever they be paid their next Wages.
Signed,

"(1) T. Surrey. (2) R. Wynton. (3) T. Dureſme.
(4) Thomas Lovell. (5) Harry Marny."

(Bibl. Cott. Veſpaſian C. XIV. Fol. 106.)

(1) Thomas Howard Earl of Surry, Lord Treaſurer. [Lord Herbert].
(2) Richard Fox Biſhop of Wincheſter, Secretary and Lord Privy Seal. [Idem.]
(3) Thomas Ruthall Biſhop of Durham. [Idem.]
(4) Conſtable of the Tower, and Maſter of the Wards. [Idem.]
(5) CAPTAIN of the *Yeomen* of the *Guard*. [Idem.]

* Hall's Chron. ſub anno 1513.
† Hall.

ſtate

ſtate, that the intention of paying them half-Yearly, inſtead of Quarterly, would, for good and modeſt Reaſons therein given, become very oppreſſive upon them. This letter is printed in Strype's Memorials*; and, though it is ſigned by 14 only, who we may ſuppoſe were a Species of Officer, perhaps *Yeomen* of the *Crown* (a Part of this Corps at that time), is yet intended to convey the ſenſe of the whole Body there employed. Sir Henry Jernegan, then the King's Lieutenant at Tournay, was privy to the Letter, and rather approved than oppoſed the Meaſure.

What turn this Repreſentation took does not tranſpire; but, however, when Tournay was given up in K. Henry's 10th Year (1518) to Francis I., King Henry did not forget their Services; for, to uſe Hall's Words,—"The KING ſent for "all the YOMEN *of* GARDE that were come from Tourney, "and after many good Wordes given to them, he graunted to "them iiii Pence the Day without Attendaunce except they "were ſpecially commaunded†."

It ought to be remembered to their Honour and Loyalty, that in the Year 1515, when the Lord Montjoy was Lieutenant of Tournay—"All the Souldiours, except ſuch as were of the

* Vol. I. Appendix, p. 6, from a MS. in the Cottonian Library.

† Hall's Chron. ſub anno 1518. This was no ſmall Pay at the time for Men whoſe Offices were nearly ſine-cures; or which only called them forth occaſionally. It was but little more than a century before, that *Two Pence* per diem (or 3*l.* 0*s.* 10*d.* per Annum, according to the preſent ſtandard) was reckoned a competence for a ſingle woman. [Anderſon on Commerce, from Rymer's Fœd. Tom. VIII. p. 299.]—And in this very Reign the annual maintenance of a ſingle *Gentlewoman* was eſtimated at 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* (not quite 4*d.* ½ per diem), as appears by the Grant of this Sum to one of the Siſterhood of St. James's Hoſpital (now the Palace), of the year 1532, which is expreſſly ſaid to be *for her ſupport*. [Rymer's Fœd. Tom. XIV. p. 563.]

"KYNG'S

"KYNG's *Garde*, rebelled, and put the Lord Mounjoye in jeo-
"pardy of his Life*"

After what we have ſeen, Sir, I would not willingly impeach the Valour of this Corps of the talleſt and moſt robuſt Men, then ſelected from all parts of the Kingdom;—but what ſhall we ſay if *Two Hundred* of them were taken Priſoners, without making the leaſt Reſiſtance, by *Four* Perſons almoſt unarmed! In anſwer, it ſhould be obſerved, that one of the *Four* was the French King [Francis I.], and that it aroſe merely from a little Divertiſement of the Moment. The Caſe was this: after K. Hen. VIII. and Francis I. had privately ſeen each other on the Day preceding the intended Grand Interview between Guiſnes and Ardres (A. D. 1520.), Francis, in order to ſurprize K. Henry with a Viſit in the Evening, laid aſide his State, and taking with him *Two Gentlemen* and a *Page* proceeded privately from Ardres to Guiſnes, which was K. Henry's Reſidence. The Governour of the Caſtle was there poſted with *Two Hundred* Archers of Henry's Body Guard, to whom the French King called out—"Surrender; I claim you for my Priſoners;" and then ordered them to conduct him to the King of England. As K. Francis was known by the Governour, and the manœuvre underſtood to be a piece of jocularity, his Majeſty was immediately ſhewn to the Apartment of K. Henry, where *He* alſo, to carry on the Jeſt, ſubmitted to Francis, and acknowledged himſelf his Priſoner likewiſe †. I may be excuſed mentioning ſuch a circumſtance regarding the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, when Two of the Greateſt Monarchs in Chriſtendom were thus *playing at Bo-peep.*

But, nevertheleſs, there is more contained in this Jeſt of K. Francis, and the Submiſſion of K. Henry, than at the Inſtant

* Hall's Chronicle.

† P. Daniel, Hiſt. de France, Tom. V. p. 64. Edit. Amſt. 1720.

"meets the Eye;" for it was formerly a Principle of the Law of Nations, that if one King, or even his Heir Apparent, entered the Dominions of another Sovereign (though not in an hoſtile manner), he might be made a Priſoner.

This was the Caſe of our own K. Richard I. on his Return from the Holy-Land; and of K. James I. of Scotland, when Prince Royal of that Kingdom, who was detained Priſoner by our K. Hen. IV. to the great and indelible Diſgrace of their reſpective Captors *. But to revert to the Corps of YEOMEN.

The preceding Reign of K. Henry VII. had been too turbulent, and full of Jealouſies, to admit of much Amuſement on

* The ſtory of K. Richard is well known; though perhaps that of the Prince of Scotland may not be familiar to ſome Readers of this Memoir. Under an apprehenſion of Domeſtic Treachery, Robert III. K. of Scots, A. D. 1407, found it neceſſary to ſend his ſecond Son James (afterwards K. James I.) out of the Kingdom, to protect him from the machinations of an aſpiring uncle, the Duke of Albany, who had already put to Death the King's eldeſt ſon David, in order to facilitate his own Acceſſion to the Throne, and meditated Deſigns on the Life of his nephew James. As the Engliſh and Scots were then at war, the Prince was deſtined for France; but, in caſe he ſhould be obliged to land upon our Coaſt, was poſſeſſed of a letter from K. Robert to Hen. IV. of England, aſking, nay almoſt petitioning, for an Aſylum, from the danger of Aſſaſſination, Poiſon, &c. [The Letter is printed in Drake's Hiſtoria Anglo-Scotica. See alſo Drummond of Hawthornden.]

The Prince, as it happened, was driven to England, and was conſidered, by the King's prevailing adviſers, as a legal Priſoner, and detained as ſuch till he was ranſomed at a great Price by his Subjects, after the Death of his Father. King James, from the Aptitude of his own Genius and Abilities, reaped a Benefit from his Impriſonment, which amply rewarded his Subjects for the expence of his Liberation;—though that circumſtance does not remove the obloquy from us! He made the Court of England an Academy, where he ſtudied Men and Manners, learned Juriſprudence, the true Principles of rational Government, which, from obſervation, he reduced to Practice. To theſe he added the Sciences, and the polite Arts, and became at length one of the beſt and moſt exemplary Monarchs that had thitherto ever worn a Crown.

the-

the part of the King, who was likewiſe of too ſombre a Diſpoſition to enter into and enjoy many pleaſurable Paſtimes; and therefore we do not find that he made uſe of his *Archers* further than as a *Corps de Garde:* but King Henry VIII. was of a different Temper. He was both a Man of Pleaſure and a Man of Buſineſs, two Circumſtances which are ſeldom combined, and in his diſports often made uſe of theſe *Archers* for his Amuſement, whereby he kept them in practice ready for Occaſions of real Importance. *Archery* was much encouraged by this Monarch as a Diverſion, by which means it became what we ſhould now call faſhionable both in this and the next Reign *.

To proceed with the YEOMEN as *Archers*, who, one may ſuppoſe, were the moſt expert of all others in the Realm:—They were frequently muſtered for the purpoſe of what we call exerciſing, and as often brought forward in the following Reign for the King's Pleaſure, and the more frequently as K. Edward was himſelf not only dexterous in the uſe of the Bow, but fond of this among all other manly Diverſions. We find in the Reign of K. Henry VIII. that on Occaſions of Feſtivity the YEOMEN ſometimes voluntarily appeared in the Field, and ſurprized the King with Proofs of their Skill. Thus in May 1515 (in a ſort of May-Game) when the King lay at Greenwich and was riding toward Shooters-Hill, to take the air with the Queen—"They eſpied" ſays Hall "a Company "of tall *Yeomen* clothed all in *grene* with *grene* Whodes [Hoods] "and *Bowes* and *Arrowes* to the Number of *Two Hundred.* "Then one of them, which called himſelf *Robyn Hood*, came

* K. Hen. VII. however, ſometimes uſed to ſhoot in perſon as appears from MS. accounts remaining in the office of the Remembrancer of the Exchequer, wherein are entries of ſeveral Sums paid for his Majeſty when he loſt the Wager.

"to

" to the King deſyring him to ſe his Men ſhoote, and the King " was content *. Then he whiſteled and al the Two-hundred " Archers ſhot and loſed at once; and then he whiſteled agayne, " and they likewyſe ſhot agayne [and] their Arrowes *Whiſteled* " *by crafte of the head*, ſo that the Noyes was ſtraunge and " great, and muche pleaſed the Kynge, the Quene, and all " the Company. All theſe Archers were of the KYNGE'S " *Garde*, and had thus appareled themſelves to make Solace to the " Kynge." Afterwards Robin Hood, to preſerve his Character, regaled the King and Queen with Veniſon and Wine " to their great Contentacion:" and then conducted them to Greenwich †.

* *Green* is allowed to have been the Livery worn by Robin Hood and his Followers. They being Out-laws, and living in Foreſts, this Colour might be thought neceſſary to favor their Concealment among Trees and Buſhes of the ſame Colour, as being leſs diſtinguiſhable. [See a note to the Hiſtory of the Gwedir Family, p. 133.]. We may, indeed, analogically conclude, that a ſimilar Reaſon might hold good with reſpect to the *Green* uniform Dreſs long worn by Rangers, Foreſters, and even preſerved to our modern Game-keepers; for this might originally be intended to operate in the ſame manner towards the Surprize and Detection of Treſpaſſers, while the Foreſt Laws were enforced with ſeverity.

† Chronicle ſub anno prædicto, Fol. 56. b. Frequent mention of *Whiſtling* Arrows is made by Writers, as a common Device in Diverſions of this ſort; though originally they probably had a real and ſubſtantial uſe as ſignals in the Night given by the out-poſts either in the Field or in Garriſon. [See Mr. Barrington's Obſervations on Archery in Vol. VII. of your Archaeologia.]. They are thought to have been firſt brought hither from China. I have ſeen the *Head* of one of them imported from thence, in the poſſeſſion of Sir Aſhton Lever: it is made of Horn, in ſhape and bulk not unlike a ſmall Walnut, perforated with one hole at the top, and five more equidiſtant holes round it on the horizontal Line, each about the Eighth of an Inch in Diameter.

The Noiſe produced by one Arrow, I am informed, is equal, at its outſet, to a loud *Whiſtle* made by a Man's Mouth; ſo that a Number of them, looſed together, muſt make a Report which would be heard, in the ſtillneſs of the night, at a conſiderable Diſtance.

Archery, as has been obſerved, was much promoted by K. Hen. VIII. and long afterwards, even when Fire-Arms became familiar; for which I refer you, Sir, to "Wood's Bowman's "Glory, or Archery revived," a very thin Duodecimo of the Year 1682, wherein are printed Three ſeveral Patents for the Encouragement of it; one by K. Hen. VIII.—another by K. James I.—and a third by K. Ch. I.

I have hinted at this little Book becauſe one circumſtance in it falls within my Province, which I ſhall give in Wood's own Words. "This noble King [Hen. VIII.] keeping a princely "Court at Windſor, cauſed ſundry Matches to be made con- "cerning ſhooting in the long Bow; and to which came many "principal *Archers*, who being in Game, and the Up-ſhoot "given, as all men thought, there was one Barlo[w] yet re- "maining to ſhoot, being one of the KING'S *Guard*; to whom "the King very graciouſly ſaid—Win them all, and thou ſhalt "be *Duke over all Archers.* This Barlo[w] drew his Bow, and "ſhooting, won the beſt: whereat the King greatly rejoiced, "commending him for his good Archery; and for that this "Barlo[w] did dwell in *Shoreditch*, the King named him *Duke "of Shoreditch.*" But to change the ſcene.

In the Caſe of (Stafford) Duke of Buckingham, who fell a Sacrifice to Wolſey's ambition, the YEOMEN were employed in the Attachment; for we are told by Hall that the Duke was firſt put into the hands of Sir Henry Marney, CAPTAIN of the KING'S GUARD; ſoon after which, when he was in his Barge going from Weſtminſter towards London, he was met by an Hundred YEOMEN *of the* KING'S GUARD, who, to uſe Hall's Words, "without abode [delay] borded the Duke's Barge, and "him in the Kynge's Name attached." From thence he was conveyed by Sir Henry Marney and his Party to the Tower *.

* Hall, ſub anno 1520.

"So much for Buckingham!"—but let us mark the Sequel.

The next time we hear of the YEOMEN, the Cardinal himſelf is found in the very hands wherein he had lately placed the Duke of Buckingham, viz. in the Cuſtody of the CAPTAIN and YEOMEN *of the* GUARD; for after he had been arreſted by the Earl of Northumberland, and Sir Walter Welch, at Cawood (an Archiepiſcopal Villa in Yorkſhire), and from thence conveyed to Sheffield Manor, into the keeping of the Earl of Shrewſbury, Steward of the Houſhold, the King ſent "Sir Wyllyam Kyng-"ſton Knight, CAPTAINE *of the* GARD to Sheffield to fetche "the Cardinal to the Tower." Seeing this, the Cardinal gave up all for loſt on the Approach of Sir Wm. Kingſton; for, ſays my Author, "When the Cardinal ſawe the CAPTAINE *of the* GARDE, he was ſore aſtonyed ..... for then he perceived greate Trouble towarde him *." But this was not all that terrified the Priſoner; for Dr. Fuller, in his Worthies [Glouceſterſhire p. 368], relates the following Circumſtance from Lord Howard's Defenſative againſt Prophecies. The *Cardinal* had been warned to beware of *Kingſton*, which he, till then, interpreted to mean the Town of *Kingſton* in Surrey, and even avoided paſſing through it in his way from Eſher to London, though it was by ſome Miles the neareſt Road †.

The

* Hall's Chronicle, Hen. VIII. fol. 94. b.

† The Times were awake to ſuch Prophecies. Thus K. Hen. IV. it is well known, had been poſſeſſed, that he ſhould die in *Jeruſalem*, little dreaming of the Chamber of that Name. Richard III. was warned, that he ſhould not live long after he ſaw *Richmond*. [Shakſpeare Act. IV. Sc. 2.]—and Michael de la Pole Duke of Suffolk was foretold he ſhould die by *Water*, an equivoque for *Walter* (Whitmore), by whoſe hands he fell. [Shakſp. Hen. VI. P. 2.] This ſuperſtitious Credulity obtained in France, very ſimilarly to the laſt Inſtance, even in the preſent Century: for after an unſucceſsful Rebellion againſt the Duke of Orleans (Regent of the Kingdom during the Minority of Louis XV.)

The CAPTAIN and the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD were at that period the Inſtruments made uſe of for apprehending Perſons of high Rank: for in the following Reign the Protector (Somerſet) on his firſt Impriſonment was placed in the Cuſtody of Sir Anthony Wingfield and the *Guard*;—"The "Lords of the Council" (ſays Stowe) "ſent Sir Anthony "Wingfield CAPTAINE *of the* GUARD to the King at Windſore, "and ſevered the Lord Protector from his Perſon, and cauſed "the Guard to watch him till the Lords coming *." Arreſts of Perſons of inferior Rank, in ſimilar Caſes, were made by a *Serjeant at Arms*.

We find, further, that this Body of YEOMEN formerly bore a ſhare in Parade even when the King was not preſent: for when Cardinal Wolſey went on the King's part to mediate between the French King Francis I. and the Emperor Charles V. (1521), he had with him—"*Lords*, *Knights*, *Eſquires*, and YEOMEN *of the* KING'S GARDE †." The Cardinal had *Yeomen* of his own who would accompany him of courſe, but this ſeems to have been a Reinforcement, propter dignitatem, expreſſly ſaid by Hall to have been "of the KING's *Guard*."

Again, though antecedent in point of time, when the Earl of Surry (Lord Admiral) was appointed Deputy of Ireland in the room of the Earl of Kildare (1519), he had with him an Hundred *Yeomen* of the KING's *Guard*, who were probably ſome of thoſe truſty Veterans who had been in the Garriſon of Tournay;

a Gentleman refuſed to make his Eſcape *by Sea*, becauſe he had once been told that he ſhould periſh *par la Mer*. The Conſequence was, that he became a Priſoner, and his Head was unhappily taken off by an Executioner whoſe name was *La Mer*. A great Triumph, ſays my author, to the Fortune-tellers! [Pollnitz's Memoirs, Vol. IV. p. 95.]

* Stowe's Chronicle, p. 600.

† Hall, ſub anno 1521.

for

for the *Gentlemen*, at leaſt, who attended him are ſpecified to have been part of that Garriſon *.

In the Year 1525 Cardinal Wolſey came to Eltham on the 8th of January, and ſtayed there till the 22d, at which time began to be fabricated thoſe Orders and Regulations, regarding the Royal Houſhold, called *The Statutes of Eltham*, which Hall tells us, "ſome ſaied were more profitable than honourable †." Among other numerous Articles of Reform, one of them materially affected the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, inſomuch that *Sixty-four* of them were diſplaced, reduced from 12 pence to 6 pence per diem, ordered to go into their own Countries, and not allowed to come to the Court unleſs they were ſent for. At the ſame time it ſhould ſeem that they were bound to keep a *Horſe* in readineſs in caſe they ſhould be called upon. On this occaſion Hall repreſents their Caſe as a matter of publick Compaſſion.—"Alas!" (ſays he) "what Sorrow and what Lamenta-
"cion was made when all theſe Perſones ſhould depart the
"Court. Some ſaied that poore Servaunts were undoen and
"muſt ſteale: ſome ſaied that thei were found [provided] of the
"Reverſions [Remnants] of the other Officers Service [Meſſes]
"ſo that for them was nothing more ſet out at the Dreſſor
"[for their Dinner] and it was greate Charitie to fynde them.
"Other ſaied that now they would polle and pill in their
"Countreys and oppreſſe the poore people ‡.—Thus every Man
"had his ſaiying."

So far Hall the Chronicler, a Contemporary Writer.

* Hall ſub anno præd.

† Chronicle, ſub anno 1525. Theſe Statutes are uſually ſtyled of the year 1526, not being promulgated (I preſume) till after Lady-day in that year, according to the old computation. They had been in Agitation from the Year 1522. [Hall's Chron. Hen. VIII. fol. 105.]

‡ Polling, *Exacting*. [Hall's Chron. p. 188.]
Pill. Fr. Piller, *to rob or plunder*, hence *to pillage*.

The

The Particulars of this Reduction here follow verbatim from the Eltham Statutes.

ORDERS.

"For the Diminution and Reformation of the GUARD.

"And for as much as by reaſon that the KING's HIGHNESS "hath, in the times of the late Wars, encreaſed the Number of "the GUARD above that which was accuſtomed, or ſhall be now "needfull to be had, who not only do occupy the greateſt part "of his Hall, and likewiſe of Lodgings near about the Court; "but alſo do entertain every of them one or two Lads or ſimple "Servants, to whom they be not able at their own Charge to "give ſufficient and honeſt Livings, and conſequently do greatly "encreaſe the ſaid Annoyance, Infection, and Confuſion in "the Court. It is therefore the KING's Pleaſure that the "Number of the ſaid GUARD ſhall at this time and from hence-"forth be eſtabliſhed to be of Perſons *, the YEOMEN "USHERS compriſed in the ſame number, to be taken and elected "of ſuch of them as ſhall be thought by his Grace moſt meet "for that purpoſe, which ſhall remain in the Wages of *Twelve* "*Pence* by the Day with other Allowances as they now have: "foreſeen that none of them ſhall keep any Servants in the "Court, nor ſuffer them to come within the ſame; but, ſuch "as they ſhall have, to keep them in the Town or elſewhere "out of the Court at their Pleaſure. And in Caſe any of the "ſaid GUARD do to the contrary of this Statute, for the firſt "Time he ſhall loſe three Days Wages, for the ſecond Time a

* Sic Orig.

"Week's

" Week's Wages, for the third time a Month's Wages, and " for the fourth Time to be expelled out of their Rooms. " And that the Porters ſuffer none of their Servants, as " nigh as they can, to enter into the King's Gate. And " as for the Reſidue of the ſaid GUARD, which now ſhall " be diſcharged, the King's Grace is contented to make them " *Yeomen* of *the Crown*, and alſo is, of his bleſſed Diſpoſition, " in conſideration of their Service, contented that ſuch of them " as have none Offices of his Grace to the Value of *Two Pence*, " ſhall have the Wages of *Six-Pence* by the Day unchequed, " and thoſe which have Offices to the Value of *Two Pence* " by the Day ſhall have, beſides the ſame Wages, *Four* " *Pence* by the Day unchequed, which ſhall be paid unto " them Quarterly, or Half-Yearly, by the Treaſurer of the " King's Chamber, and they licenced to repair to their Dwelling " Places, and to be ready to ſerve the KING when his Grace ſhall " command them. So that after the Death of any of the " ſaid Reſidue of the GUARD, not appointed to attend daily " upon the King's Perſon, the Pleaſure of the King is, their " ſaid Wages ſhall ceaſe and be extinct, and no further to be " granted of new to any other Perſon."

The laſt opportunity we have of obſerving this Body in the Reign before us, is toward the cloſe of it, when the King proceeded from Calais to the Siege of Bologne, A. D. 1544. The Circumſtances to our purpoſe, in the printed Account, are theſe:

" Then the *Garde* on fote, that is to ſay, *Twenty-five Archers* " on the Right Side, and as many *Gonners* [i. e. Arquebuſiers] " on the Left Side. Cheſtre, Gentylman-Huiſſier, had the " leading of the *Archers*, and Harman, Gentylman-Huiſſiar, had " the leading of the *Gonners*, the King's Majeſtie [being] in the " myds of his Pikemen [i. e. Gentlemen-Penſioners.] Then " followed the *Men of Armes*; alſo alooff off there were Fiftie *Ar-*

" *chers*

" *chers on horſebacke* on the Right Side, who were ledde by " Mr. Willoughbye, and on the Left Side as many *Gonners* " *on horſebacke*, who were ledde by John Ap-Rikards, and thus " marched forwards. At Sandingfelde ſtood embatyled *The* CAP- " TAIN *of the* GARDE with *all the Garde*, and other in good " Ordre, till the King was paſt, and ſo marched after the King, " every *Bande* in ordre having his *Banner* diſplayed *."

Notwithſtanding the above Retrenchment by the Statutes of Eltham, the YEOMEN appear to have been numerous in the following Reign, much exceeding the original Eſtabliſhment; for, according to a MS. which I have ſeen, containing the current Expences of the Sixth Year of K. Edward, there were *Sixty-ſix* YEOMEN *in Ordinary*—and an *Hundred* and *Forty-one Extraordinary*, beſides Fifteen *Yeomen* at the *Tower*, now called *Warders*, at an enlarged Pay †.

This is the firſt mention that I find made of YEOMEN peculiarly appropriated to the *Tower*, of whom a further Account will be given when we come to the Reign of K. James I.

On ſplendid Occaſions, no doubt, the major Part of the Corps would be brought to view at once, and from their

* Rymer's Fœdera, Tom XV. p. 53. It is obſervable, that the Command, of the two firſt Diviſions at leaſt was given to Gentlemen-Uſhers, though Officers of a civil nature: but it muſt be remembered not only that the whole Court had at the time a military complexion, but that the *Corps* of *Yeomen* had no ſubordinate Officers except the Clerk of the Cheque, whoſe Buſineſs lay in a peculiar Line. By the *Men of Arms* I underſtand thoſe Bands appointed to the Nobility with their reſpective Banners [v. Part II. of this work, p. 31.].

Here we find one Hundred of the *Guard* on *Horſeback* as before mentioned, p. 9. [See alſo Lord Herbert's Life of Hen. VIII. p. 578.].

† Let it be obſerved, that the YEOMEN, before mentioned, in the Orders of K. Henry VIII. which relate to the Duty at the *Tower*, affected the main Body, and were not confined to the *Warders*; for at that time the KING reſided there with his whole Retinue.

peculiar

peculiar Habits would give the Court an Air of great Magnificence. Thus, on the Reception of the Q. Dowager of Scotland at Whitehall (1550), the King tells us, in his Journal, that "from the outer Gate up to the Preſence Chamber, on "both ſides, ſtood *The Guard*."

In the above-mentioned MS. I meet with a Payment—"To "his Majeſty's Fletcher for Sheaves of Arrows, Caſes, and "Girdles for his Grace's Guard *."

K. Edward VI. among other ſimilar Exerciſes, ſeems peculiarly to have attached himſelf to Archery; and accordingly we are told, in his Majeſty's Journal (ſo often mentioned in a former Memoir), that in the Year 1550—"It was appointed "there ſhould be ordinarily an Hundred *Archers* and an Hun-"dred *Halberdiers*, either good Wreſtlers, or Caſters of the "Bar, or Leapers, or Runners, or tall Men of perſonage." With theſe *Archers*, in particular, the King was often amuſed in his Sports, by ſeeing them ſhoot, and ſometimes would ſhoot in perſon. Thus when Monſ. Le Mareſchal St. André brought over the Order of St. Michael from the French King to K. Edward, he was entertained with Feats in Archery among other things: on which occaſion the King ſays, "He "ſaw *me* ſhoot, and ſaw all my *Guards* ſhoot together †." In one of the Challenges, where the King was engaged, he is minute and candid enough to tell us in which points he won, and in which he loſt.——"The firſt Day of the Challenge "at Baſe or Running ‡," ſays he, "The King won;" and on

* A Sheaf contained Twenty-four Arrows.

† Journal.

‡ See Curialia, Part II. p. 35.

"another Day," continues he, "I *loſt* the Challenge of Shooting "at *Rounds*, and won at *Rovers* *."

Again, the King, in his Journal, ſpeaking of a Muſter which was made in the ſame year, gives a remarkable Inſtance of the Strength and Expertneſs of his *Archers*, in theſe Terms:— "There muſtered before me an Hundred *Archers*, two Arrows "apiece, all of the *Guard* [who] afterward ſhot together; "and they ſhot at an Inch-Board, which ſome pierced quite, "and ſtuck in the other Board: divers pierced it [them] quite "thorow with the Heads of their Arrows, the Boards being "very well-ſeaſoned Timber."

We may finiſh this Reign with obſerving, that as Archery grew gradually out of uſe, and Fire-Arms prevailed, the *Arquebus* (or ſmall Gun) in proceſs of time ſucceeded to the *Bow* in this Corps; for it will appear at the cloſe of the Reign of K. Charles II. that the YEOMEN were differently armed, one Half of them bearing the *Arquebus*, and the other Half *Pikes* or *Par-*

* Shooting at *Rounds* is a Shot at a Target, or any ſimilar object, circumſcribed with Circles of different Diameters, fixed to a Butt. He who lodges his Arrow neareſt the Centre wins the Prize. The Object, in this caſe, as well as the Diſtance, is always certain:—but at *Rovers* every thing differs; the Mark is a Tree, a Gate, or any given Field-Object that occurs; the Diſtance is greater; and the Arrows being diſcharged with a conſiderable Elevation, the place of their Fall, with regard to the Mark, determines the Merit of the Shot. A good Archer therefore, in this caſe, ought to be able to find the neceſſary Curve by his Eye, and thereby govern his Exertions. The Perſon who wins has a right to name the next Mark, ſo that the Term ſeems to be drawn from the *Roving* of the Shooters from one Object to another, and from time to time, at the pleaſure of the laſt Winner †.

† Dr. Fuller gives us a Repartee of the KING on ſome of theſe Occaſions. "One day, "being ſhooting at Butts, he [the King] *hit the very mark*. The Duke of Northumber- "land being preſent,—Well *ſhot*, my Liege, quoth he: to which the KING replied,— "But you *ſhot* nearer the mark when you *ſhot* off my good Unkle Somerſet's Head." [Church Hiſtory, B. VII. Sect. 2.]

tiſans,

ziſans, ſuch as they all now uſe *. The *Arquebus* was laid aſide (according to Mr. John Chamberlayne and Mr. Miege) after the Demiſe of K. William, ſince which time the *Yeomen* have been uniformly armed and accoutred, as at preſent †.

Under Q. Mary, Sir, the Number of YEOMEN appears to have been much enlarged; for as given in a MS. in the Library of your Society, it amounted to no leſs than *Two Hundred* YEOMEN added to the *Two Hundred and Seven* which the Queen found in her Brother's Eſtabliſhment, beſides *Thirty Yeomen* of the *Crown*. As this Augmentation evidently took place immediately after the Queen's Acceſſion, one is led to imagine ſhe had ſome fears for her ſafety from the Party who ſupported the Intereſts of Lady Jane Grey.

The Queen's *Guard* was not only very numerous, but very ſplendidly habited, for I meet with the Docquet of a Warrant, in the Nature of an Impreſt, of the Year 1553, "to deliver to "Peter Richardſon, maker of the Spangles for the rich Coats of "the Queen's Highneſs's *Guard*, the Sum of One Thouſand "Pounds ‡." Theſe Coats were likewiſe embroidered, as appears

* Partiſan] Fr. *Pertuiſane*. *Pertuis* is an obſolete French Word for a Hole: ſo that *La Pertuiſane* denotes the Inſtrument. In P. Daniel's Hiſt. de la Milice Françoiſe. tom. I. pl. 48. ſome drawings of the French *Pertuiſanes* may be ſeen, to which ours bear a ſtrong Reſemblance. The French *Archers* in their offenſive Arms underwent a Change ſimilar to our own; for P. Daniel, on the Authority of the Preſident Fauchet, tells us, that, after the Reign of Charles VII. (who died 1461), the *Archers* of the *Guard* varied their Weapons at different times, uſing *Halberts* in the Court, and *Lances* in the Field; and adds further, that when the Preſident wrote (1579), and for 40 years before, part of them were armed with the *Arquebus*. [P. Daniel de la Milice Françoiſe, tom. II. p. 147.]

† The Arquebus was in ſize between a Hand-Gun and a Muſket, and was fired without a Reſt. In the Year 1743, when K. Geo. II. was in Germany during the War, the Six *Yeomen Hangers*, and two *Yeomen Bed-Goers*, were accoutred with the *Arquebus*, or *Carbine*. V. poſtea.

‡ Bibl. Harl. N° 643.

from another Warrant of the ſame Year, of a ſubſequent Date, to pay to the above mentioned Peter Richardſon, Goldſmith, for 7,175 Ounces of Spangles gilt, delivered to the Queen's Embroiderers for embroidering the Coats of her Majeſty's *Guard*, *Footmen*, and *Meſſengers* *.

In the following Year the Face of the Court had nevertheleſs very nearly changed, for the Queen grew neceſſitous, and entertained thoughts of diſbanding the *Hundred Archers* of the *Yeomen*; but the Intention was over-ruled, and Extortion from her ſubjects ſupplied the place of this Meaſure †.

After the Queen's Marriage, beſides this large Body of YEOMEN, and her Majeſty's *Band of Gentlemen Penſioners*, K. Philip retained a Guard of *Four Hundred* Men; viz. an *Hundred* Engliſhmen;—an *Hundred* Spaniards;—an *Hundred* Germans;—and an *Hundred* Suiſſes ‡. The Three laſt of theſe Bodies, we may ſuppoſe, he brought with him.

I am ſorry to obſerve, that this Reign affords a circumſtance rather diſgraceful to the Corps; for I find the following minute on record in the Council-Books:

"In Council, July 14, 1554.

"This Day Richard Smith, one of the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, "for ſpreading abroad lewd and ſeditious Books, was committed "to the Marſhalſea, *his Coat being firſt taken from his Back*, "and he diſcharged of his Service §."

Let it, however, be here obſerved, for the honour of the Corps, that this, as far as at preſent appears, is the only crime of

* Bibl. Harl. N° 643.

† Mr. Warton's Life of Sir Thomas Pope, from a MS. in the Harleian Library, N° 643.

‡ Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 205.

§ Bibl. Harl. N° 643. fol. 31.

notoriety that can be imputed to this large Body of Men, of humble Birth, in the courſe of full Three Hundred Years.

Queen Elizabeth, Sir, continued the YEOMEN *in Ordinary* at the Number of *Two Hundred*, though ſhe reduced the *Extra*-YEOMEN to *One Hundred* and *Seven*, thereby throwing off an Hundred from the whole Corps: ſhe had, at the ſame time, *Thirty* YEOMEN of the *Crown*, and *Four* YEOMEN USHERS*. But the principal Circumſtance worth mentioning in this Reign ariſes from the pious Merit of an Individual; for Cornelius Van Dun, a Native of Breda, who had been a *Yeoman Uſher* to K. Hen. VIII. K. Edw. VI. Q. Mary and Q. Elizabeth, founded and endowed an Alms-Houſe at the End of Petty-France in the Pariſh of St. Margaret Weſtminſter, for *Twenty poor Widows* †. Beſides this Foundation, he either gave, or bequeathed, to the Poor of the Pariſh in general *Twenty Pounds* ‡. There is another Charitable Inſtitution eſtabliſhed by an Officer of ſimilar Rank, recorded by Weever, who ſays, that an Hoſpital at the bottom of Highgate Hill was founded by William Poole, a *Yeoman of the Crown* in the Reign of K. Edw. IV. §. Theſe Circumſtances are the more memorable, as the higher Orders of Courtiers have left few ſuch Remains of their Piety and Charity.

To theſe may be added, though out of the Order of Time, a Perpetuation of the Memory of another benevolent Yeoman, in the following Century, and which is to be found in the Church

* Peck's Deſiderata Curioſa. The Number of *Uſhers* afterwards aroſe to *Fifteen*, and at length ſubſided to *Eight*, as they ſtand at preſent. V. poſtea.

† See his monumental Inſcription in St. Margaret's Church, Weſtminſter; and the Tablet over the Door of the Alms-Houſes.

‡ Stowe's Survey of London and Weſtminſter. He died A. D. 1577, at the advanced Age of 94 years.

§ Fun. Mon. p. 499. Edit. 1631.

of Wingfield in Berkſhire. I give it verbatim from Mr. Aſhmole.

" In the Eaſt Wall of the South Iſle is ſet a Plate of Braſs, " whereon is engraved the Figure of one of the *Yeomen* of the " *Guard*, in his Coate, holding his Halbert in his Left Hand, " and his Right giving a Loafe of Bread to Two poore Men: " beneath which is this Epitaph:

" Here lyeth the Body of Thomas Montague borne in this " Pariſh, where alſo he dyed March 31, 1630, when he had " lived almoſt 92 years, and had byn a good parte thereof " a *Yeoman* of the *Guard*, and a *Friend* to the *Poore* *."

Whether it was the Province of the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, *ab origine*, to carry up the Royal Dinner, I will not ſay, tho' this is the firſt time I have had an Opportunity of obſerving it: but Hentzner, when he ſaw Q. Elizabeth dine in public in the Year 1598, tells us, that the Dinner was ſerved by the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, *bare-headed*, cloathed in Scarlet with a Golden Roſe on their Backs †. That they ſhould appear on ſuch occaſions *bare-headed* does not ſtrike one at firſt, as the Queen

* Antiq. of Berkſhire, Vol. III. p. 35.

† Travels. Edit. Strawberry Hill, p. 52. He ſhould have ſaid both on their *Breaſts* and *Backs*; for that Badge was ſo worn in the Reign of K. Edw. VI. as appears from the Painting at Cowdry of that King's Proceſſion from the Tower to Weſtminſter, lately engraved by Your Society. The Union Roſe, thereby intended, has ſince the Acceſſion of K. James I. been combined with the Thiſtle, and is now worn by the *Yeomen* both on the Back and Breaſt. Hentzner calls them Satellites *Regii*, in diſtinction from the *Gentlemen Penſioners*, whom he had juſt before ſtyled Satellites *Nobiles*. [See Part II. of this Work, p. 48.] We may form ſome Idea of the official Dreſs of the *Yeomen* in this Reign from a Monument to the Memory of William Payn, a *Yeoman* of the *Guard*, (who died 1568), in the Church of Eaſt-Wickam in Kent, whereon is his Effigies, repreſenting a corpulent man in the Habit of his Office, having a Beard and Ruff, with Trunk Breeches, and a Sword by his Side, and on his Breaſt a Roſe ſurmounted by a Crown. [Thorpe's Regiſt. Roff. p. 992.] This figure is engraving, I am informed, for a ſecond part of Mr. Thorpe's valuable work.

was

was not only ſerved, but even ſpoke to, kneeling *: neither ſhould I have mentioned this particular Circumſtance, but that, at preſent, the YEOMEN never take off their Caps in the Royal Preſence, not even ſhould the King happen to ſpeak to them: The ſame Etiquette is obſerved by the Coachmen and Footmen, when they wear their *Caps of Honour*;—though both theſe and the *Yeomen*, in ſuch caſes, touch them *en militaire*. Hentzner further remarks of the YEOMEN, that they were "the "talleſt and ſtouteſt Men that could be found in all England; "being carefully ſelected for the Service."

To return for a moment to the Office of the YEOMEN as far as relates to their carrying up the Diſhes to the Sovereign's Table, which continues to be a Branch of their Duty to this Day even at the Queen's Palace. Every body knows that they have obtained the *Sobriquet* (or Nick-Name) of *Beef-Eaters*:—which ſome impute to their *Tallneſs*, or ſeeming *Embonpoint*, while others wiſh to deduce the Term as corrupted from the French *Buffetiers* †. To this laſt I can by no means accede, as they never had any Connection with the ancient *Cup-board*, or the more modern *Beaufet*, which was always kept by an Officer of ſuperior Rank, viz: a *Gentleman Uſher*—an *Eſquire* of the *Body*, &c.

The Buſineſs and Duty to be performed by the *Yeomen* in the *Preſence-Chamber*, when the Sovereign dined in State, was thus divided. One Party of them brought in the Diſhes, and retired as ſoon as the Dinner was ſerved; after which, another Party took poſt in the Chamber, for the purpoſe of keeping Order. This appears from the Ordinances of K. Charles I. who adhered much to the State and Dignity of his Predeceſſors. When our So-

* Hentzner's Travels, ut ſupra.

† Antiquarian Repertory, Vol. I. p. 51.

vereigns

vereigns dined in the *Privy-Chamber*, it was, comparatively, a *petit Diner*, and the Table was ſerved by the *Sewers*, *Cup-bearers*, &c. who belonged officially to that Room; while the *Yeomen*, who had not the Entrée of that Chamber on any occaſion, were totally excluded *.

On the other hand, I am of opinion, trival as the Queſtion may be, that the *Yeomen* may thank their quondam Sovereign (K. Hen. VIII.) for this ſarcaſtical Appellation, and who might draw it upon them in conſequence of the Viſit he once made to the Abbot of Reading, in the Character and Habit of a YEOMAN *of the* GUARD. The Story, as you well know, Sir, is related by Dr. Fuller in Subſtance as follows †:

The King, being hunting in that Neighbourhood, diſguiſed himſelf as one of his *Yeomen*, and in a Frolick paid a Viſit to the Abbot about Dinner-time. The perſonal Bulk of the King would well enable him to ſupport the Character. The Abbot, finding it neceſſary (perhaps through fear) to be civil to ſuch a Gueſt, invited the ſuppoſed *Yeoman* to dine at his own Table, where was a large Piece of Beef, of which the King, hungry from the Chace, ate rather voraciouſly. Upon obſerving this, the Abbot cried out—"Well fare thy Heart! and here in a "Cup of Sack I remember the Health of his *Grace* your Maſ-"ter: I would give an *hundred Pounds* on the condition I could "feed ſo heartily on *Beef* as you do. Alas! *my* weak and "ſqueamiſh Stomach will hardly digeſt the Wing of a ſmall "Rabbit or Chicken!" The King (or rather the *Beef-Eater*) took his Leave, and in a few Weeks afterwards the Abbot was

* Theſe *Sewers* of the *Privy-Chamber* (or *Gentlemen Sewers*), together with the *Carvers*, and *Cup-Bearers*, were preſerved in Office till the Year 1782, when they were aboliſhed.

† Church Hiſtory, Book VI.

committed

committed close Prisoner to the Tower, and fed for a short time on Bread and Water; at length a Piece of *Beef* was set before him, for which the Abbot did not then want a competent Inclination; and while he was thus regaling himself, the King came intentionally into the Apartment, *in propriâ personâ*, and demanded the 100*l.* for having restored to the Abbot his lost Appetite for *Roast-Beef*. The Abbot might perhaps think the Remedy severe, and the Physician's Fee rather large: but Dr. Fuller vouches the Truth of the Story, and says the Money was paid before he had his Release; after which it is natural enough to conceive that the Abbot would never afterwards see any of the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD without annexing the Idea of a *Beef-Eater*; and the Story, when circulated, might very fairly entail that *Nick-Name* upon them.

To return, Sir, more seriously to the YEOMEN. From an Account of the Household of K. James I. (of the Year 1615), in the College of Arms, the YEOMEN are found at *Two Hundred* in number, without any distinction of *Ordinary* and *Extraordinary*.

During the Life of *Prince* HENRY (which ended 1612), after his Establishment was formed, a Detachment from the main Body of the *Yeomen* was allowed for the Support of his State, and as his personal Guard, when the following Orders relative to them issued in the Year 1610*. The *Prince* then resided at St. James's Palace, while the KING kept his Court at Whitehall; and the Orders run thus:

"The YEOMEN *of the* GUARD shall diligently keep Guard "in the *Great Chamber*, suffering no Strangers to pass through "unless they be known.

* Bibl. Harl. N° 642. They are printed, with the rest of the Orders for the Government of the Prince's Household, by Dr. Birch. [Life of Prince Henry, p. 448.]

"Alſo *Two* of them ſhall with their Halberds attend at the "Gate to aſſiſt the Porters to execute their office, and the "Orders to be obſerved in time of Infection, and on other "Occaſions.

"They ſhall be eſpecially careful to keep the [Great] *Cham-*"*ber* free, from *Ten* of the clock in the *Morning* untill *One*;— "and from *Four* in the *Evening* untill *Seven*; that his HIGH-"NESS may quietly take his Repaſts in the *Preſence* [Cham-"ber *]."

Very ſoon after the Acceſſion of K. James, a large Retrenchment became neceſſary; but it extended chiefly to Diet and culinary œconomics, and did not touch the King's State; for he rather encreaſed than curtailed the Parade of his Court, and of courſe added to the Expence of his Pride ſome of thoſe Savings, which, *ex neceſſitate*, aroſe from his Poverty. The YEOMEN *of the* GUARD partook of this Bounty, for his own Love of ſplendour induced him to enlarge the Number of them conſiderably, and the Influence of a Favourite prevailed for an Advance in their Pay. Thus Stowe †, or his Continuator, tells us, that—"Whereas the auncient number of the GUARD "was but *Seaven Score*, his Majeſtie had encreaſed them, and "made them full *Two Hundred*, whereof *Six Score* are to attend, "by turnes, upon *his owne Royal Perſon*, and *Three Score* to "attend the QUEENE's MAJESTIE, and the other *Twenty* are to "attend upon the Perſon of our moſt noble PRINCE. And "whereas the Wages of the ſaid GUARD, at the King's com-"ming, was *Two Shillings* a Day for *Three* Months in *Summer*, "and but *Twenty-Pence* a day for *Nine* Months in *Winter*, at the "humble and earneſt Suite of the Right Honourable the Lord

* This Room is next interiorly adjoining to the *Great-Chamber*.

† Chronicle, p. 1037.

"*Erſkin*,

"*Erſkin*, Baron of Dirleton, CAPTAINE *of his Majeſty's* GUARD, "the King has given them *Two Shillings* and *Four Pence* a day "for the *Summer* Six Months, and *Two Shillings* a day for the "*Winter* Six Months *."

This being the Period, Sir, for which the WARDERS *of the Tower* have been reſerved [ſee before, p. 24.]; I would remark, that the *Warders* were not originally YEOMEN *of the* GUARD either in *Ordinary* or *Extraordinary*. I rather think, if they had any ſpecific Denomination, more than *Warders*, or *Keepers*, of the Tower (of the Rank of Yeomanry), that they might have been a part of thoſe Officers called YEOMEN *of the* CROWN, who were not of any particular Claſs as to Functions, and therefore might very well be conſigned to this Duty, while the Tower was conſidered and uſed occaſionally as a Palace, as well as a Garriſon. But let that paſs, though the Authority which follows will certainly ſhew that the WARDERS were not incorporated with the YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, or even wore the *Uniform*, till the Reign of K. Edw. VI. a circumſtance which I did not inſiſt upon at the time it took place, as having other collateral matters relative to them to mention at this Juncture.

* *Sir Thomas Erſkine* had been inſtrumental to the King's Preſervation from the Gowrie Conſpiracy; for which, among other marks of Royal Favor, he received the above Barony before the Union of the two Crowns; was afterwards created *Viſcount Fenton*, and at length *Earl of Kelly*. [Crawfurd's Peerage of Scotland.] His Lordſhip was appointed *Captain of the Yeomen* on the Conviction, and conſequent Diſmiſſion, of Sir Walter Raleigh, 1603: and there is reaſon to imagine that either Stowe, or Edmund Howes (Stowe's Continuator), received the above-given Account from his Lordſhip, as he is mentioned among others, who had favoured one of them with ſome Communications. [Chronicle, p. 1087.]

In a Letter written by *Sir William Waade, Knt. Lieutenant of the Tower*, to the Viſcount Fenton, CAPTAIN *of the* YEOMEN of the GUARD, dated Aug. 24, 1612, among other things, not immediately to the point, we are told—"That before the firſt "Commitment of the Duke of Somerſett at the time of K. "Edward VI. the *Warders* did never weare *the* KING'S *Coate*; "but he, ſeeing the Paines they tooke, and to winne their Fa- "vour, and to leave a Memoriall of his Favour to them, pro- "miſed to procure them HIS MAJESTIE'S *Cloth* whenſoever "it ſhould pleaſe his Majeſtie to ſett him at liberty, which "he upon his Enlargement performed, and ſo it was ordered "at that time they ſhould be ſworne *Extraordinary* YEOMEN "of the *Chamber*, and *that* hath continued ever ſince *."

It was early in the Reign of K. James that the WARDERS firſt aroſe to their preſent Number and Stipend: and the ſame Intereſt which favoured the YEOMEN extended itſelf to the WARDERS. In ſaying this it muſt be underſtood, that the Number has not been invariably the ſame, as will be obſerved in the Order of time, as the Changes occurred. Queen Elizabeth's Miniſters had been inexorable to the Supplications, the Cries, and almoſt to the Tears, of theſe Officers, praying for a ſmall Addition to their Pay then but *Eight Pence* per diem.

* From a MS. in the Poſſeſſion of Tho. Aſtle, Eſq. Of the Writer of this Letter, ſome Account may be ſeen in Mr. Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting in England. [Art. Francis Delaram.] At that time, and for many Years before, no Conſtable of the Tower had been appointed, and the Lieutenant was the Chief Officer. [Stowe's Survey of London and Weſtminſter. B. 1. p. 73.] The Protector (Somerſet), through the Intrigues of John Dudley Earl of Warwick (afterwards Duke of Northumberland), was committed to the Tower in October 1549, as an Enemy to the King, where he continued a Priſoner till the February following, when he was diſcharged, not being accuſed of any Crime that could affect his Life. [Bp. Godwin's Annals of K. Edw. VI.]

The Number had been diminiſhed; but the Salaries of thoſe who remained received no advance from that Circumſtance, though their Duty was more ſevere; for the Savings which accrued from ſuch Reduction went into her Majeſty's Coffers. The WARDERS at length petitioned the Queen, through the Interceſſion of *Sir Chriſtopher Hatton*, Lord High Chancellor (who had been formerly *Captain* of the *Yeomen* *), and obtained a gracious Anſwer from the Throne: but theſe Hopes vaniſhed ſoon afterwards by the Death of their Patron †. Upon this unfortunate Event the WARDERS had no warm Advocate to reſume their Cauſe, and were obliged to proceed through the cold Medium of a Secretary of State in his official Capacity; and accordingly preſented the following Petition, ſtating their former flattering Hopes through the Intereſt of the Chancellor, had he lived.

"*To the right honorable* Sir Robert Cecill Knight *principall Secre-*
"*tary to her Majeſty and of her Highnes moſt honourable Privy*
"*Counſaile.*

"Moſt humbly beſeecheth your Honor, your daily Orators
"the *Yeomen Warders* of her Majeſtie's Towre of London, That
"where your ſaide Orators have ben longe moſt humble ſuters
"unto her Majeſtie for the augmentation of theire wages, in
"regarde of theire greate paynes and attendance, theire povertie
"and the dearnes of all thinges in theſe tymes, as allſo for
"other reaſons in their peticon ſpecified as by the Coppy there-
"of (which we humbly preſente unto your Honors viewe an-
"nexed hereunto) maye appeare, and haue heretofore receyved

* See Curialia, Part II. p. 60. and the Appendix, poſtea.

† St. Chriſtopher died, in poſſeſſion of the Great Seal, 1591.

"moſt

" moſt gratious aunſweare of her Highneſs to theire greate hope " and comfort in their ſaide ſute, yf the deathe of the right " honorable *Sir Chriſtopher Hatton Knight* late Lord Chauncellor " of England (to whoſe conſideration and reporte the ſame " was referred) had not prevented the ſame *. Foraſmuche as " your ſaid Orators are now compelled, through the increaſe of " theire povertie and wants, to reuiue their ſaide ſuite, and to " that ende haue prepared theire humble peticon ready to be " deliuered to her Highneſs, yet notwithſtanding thought it " theire dueties to acquainte your Honour therewith before " the delivery, moſt humbly beſeechinge your good Honour to " graunte your honourable favour and conſente to their procee- " dinge therein, and as tyme and occaſion ſhall ſearve to further " the ſame. And your ſaid Orators (as moſt bounden) ſhall " ever praye for your Honors liefe in healthe and all happines " longe to continue †."

The above Intention of the WARDERS not being apparently oppoſed by the Secretary, they preferred the following Petition to the Queen, with the Reaſons and *Occaſions* thereto annexed, which prompted them thus ſtrongly to ſollicit her Majeſty.

" *To the* Queenes *moſt excellent Majeſtie our ſacred ſoueraigne Lady and Miſtris.*

" Moſt gratious and renowned ſoueraigne, your Majeſties " ſworne ſervants the *Yeomen Warders* of your Highnes Towre " of London moſt humbly beſeechen that, in your gratious ac-

* Fourſcore of the *Yeomen* attended his Funeral, perhaps voluntarily, in honour of his having been firſt their CAPTAIN, and to the laſt their *Patron*. [Stowe's Chron. under the year 1591.]

† From Mr. Aſtle's MS. above-cited.

" cuſtomed

" cuſtomed Clemency and Bounty, your Highnes would vouch-
" ſafe in your Royall munificence to conſider of them. They
" have byn long ſuters to your Majeſtie for ſome augmentacon
" of theire Wages, and haue receyued of your Highnes moſt
" gratious Wordes to there greate comforte therein. They
" therefore are now eftſoones through extreame neceſſity com-
" pelled to reuiue their ſaide ſute, and to beſeech at your ſacred
" handes the effecting thereof towardes the releife of theire
" greate and greiuous Wantes, which deſerteth their creditt in
" that place of your Majeſtie's ſervice, for ſo ſmall is the fee
" thereof as it is not able to yealde ſufficient for theire dyet
" onely *. Thus beſeechinge of your princely benignity to be
" gratious to them, they and all theires (as nevertheleſſe already
" bounde) will dayly praye to God for the magnificente Eſtate
" of your Highneſs in perfecte Health, Honor, and continual
" Victory over all your Highnes Enemyes."

" *Occaſions that compell your Highnes ſaide ſervantes to be ſuters*
" *for ſome aduauncemente of theire Wages.*

" 1. Firſt, there hath byn heretofore more *Warders* in your
" Majeſties ſaide Towre then now there are, viz. 42, and the
" Gonners of the Towre did then allſo of duety keepe Watche
" with them, to the comforte of the *Warders*, which Gonners
" doe now and of tyme have diſcontinued that ſervice, and the
" whole chardge thereof is now ympoſed vppon your ſuppliants
" being but 30 in nomber.

" 2. Item, it was ordered by the Lords of your Majeſtie's hon-
" orable Counſale, that the ſaide Gonners ſhould gyue to the
" ſaide *Warders* 6d. out of each 20s. of theire fee to take vppon

* Eight Pence per diem. V. p. 36.

" them

" them the whole ſervice of Watche and Warde for themſelves " and the ſaide Gonners, which for a tyme was duely payde.

" 3. Item, the ſaide allowance from the ſaide Gonners (which " was accompted as good as halfe the Warders Fee) was cutt off " by the meanes of Sir William Pellham Knighte then Lieu- " tenante of your Majeſties Ordnance, and Sir Owen Hopton " Knighte then Lieutenante of your Majeſties ſaide Towre, " whoe in reſpecte thereof promiſed to be a meanes to your " Highnes to augmente the *Warders* Fee by 4d. a daye more " then it uſually had ben, which being unaccompliſhed hath " ben and is the greate hinderance of the ſaide *Warders*.

" 4. Item, their Watche which was wonte to be renued at " midnighte dothe now continue all the nighte throughout.

" 5. Item, the Occaſiones of all thinges incident to man is " farr dearer then heretofore.

" 6. Item, the Fee of the *Warders* is no more but 8d. by the " daye, as it was longe before they felte of theiſe extremities.

" Theiſe occaſions compelled the *Warders*, about 9 yeeres " paſt, to become humble ſuters to your Highnes for amende- " mente of theire wages, who gratiouſly referred them to theire " *Captayne*, uppon whoſe reporte, your Majeſtie would haue " conſideracon for theire releiſe.

" Therefore we moſt humbly renewe thys ſute to your High- " nes, beſeeching your Majeſtie's princely compaſſion towards " us your poore ſervantes *."

The foregoing Application had as little Succeſs as the former, and was cruſhed, *re infectâ*, by the Demiſe of the Crown, after, as we have ſeen, it had been agitated for *Nine* Years.

This ſecond Repulſe by the hand of Heaven theſe poor men, no doubt, looked upon with Deſpair:—but it was eventually

* From the laſt-cited MS.

fortunate

fortunate to them. *Lord Erſkine*, in his beneficent offices to the main Body of the YEOMEN under his Command, did not at the ſame time forget the Warders; for we are likewiſe told, by Stowe's Continuator*, that K. James—"enlarged the Wages of the WARDERS of the Tower from *Eight Pence* a day unto *Fourteene Pence* "a day, at the Suite of the ſaid *Lord Erskin*; and ſince that, in- "creaſed their number by adding *Ten* more to them, allowing "them as much Wages as the former." The firſt of theſe Circumſtances is confirmed by a Report made to the Earl of Dorſet of the State of the Tower 1604†:—and the ſecond (as to the Encreaſe of Number) took place in the following Year (1605), ſoon after the Gun-Powder Plot, as appears from ſome expreſs Words in a Letter written by *Sir William Waade*, Lieutenant of the Tower, to *Lord Erskine* (when *Viſcount Fenton*) A. D. 1612.—wherein he ſtates that "His Majeſty thought it meete "to add (at the time of the Powder Treaſon) *Ten* WARDERS "more‡."

The above Acquiſition, in point of Advance, was more than the WARDERS ſeem to have expected; for, by the Third Article, as before given, they would have been contented with *Four Pence* per diem added to their *Eight* Pence, by way of Compoſition for *Watching* and *Warding* on the Part of the Gunners. Inſtead of this, their Pay received the Encreaſe of *Six Pence* per diem, and nothing appears, at leaſt, to bind them to more than their own accuſtomed Duty.

The Value of Money beginning to decreaſe very much in the ſucceeding Reign, the Wages of *Fourteen Pence* per diem were found by the Parties inadequate to the Expences of the

* Chronicle p. 1037.
† In the Library of the Marquis of Lanſdowne.
‡ Mr. Aſtle's MS.

Times. They therefore preferred the following Petition to the Houſe of Commons for an Enlargement in their Pay, which ſtep went ſo far as to be recommended by the Houſe to the Commiſſioners of the Treaſury for Conſideration and Attention; but the Reſult does not appear; neither do I diſcover at what time the Salaries of the WARDERS were advanced, although it probably took place ſoon after the Reſtoration, upon a general Regulation of the whole Body, A. D. 1668.

" *To the honorable the Houſe of Commons nowe aſſembled in the high*
" *Court of Parliament.*

" The humble Petition of his Majeſties Servants the *Yeomen*
" *Warders* of his Highnes Tower of London, being *Forty*
" in Nomber,

" Humbly Shewing,

" That your poore Supplicants are tyed to contynuall ſervice
" as well night and day in all extreamities of weather, as in all
" contagious tymes of ſicknes, when all neceſſarie proviſions are
" at deare Rates, not having any Allowance towards their main-
" tenance but *Fourteen Pence* per diem, which is very ſmall,
" conſidering the dearnes in theis tymes, which occaſions your
" ſupplicants to liue in a poore and bare eſtate, having byne tyed
" to extraordinary ſervices for above theis three yeares paſt, and
" are like ſtill to contynue the ſame.

" And they further ſhewe to this Honourable Aſſembly, that
" they are nowe behind and unpaid their ſaid Wages, Two
" Yeares and a Quarter ended at Midſomer laſt paſt, notwith-
" ſtanding their often Peticoning for the ſame, which, by order
" of Privy Seale, ſhould be Quarterly paid. They are therefore

" forc't

"forc't to take upp their Proviſions upon truſt, at exceſſive "deare rates, which hath much impoveriſhed your poore "Supplicants.

"They therefore moſt humbly beſeech this honourable Af- "ſembly, that you would bee pleaſed not onely to order "the Payment of their ſaid Arrears, but to beſtowe "vpon your poore Supplicants (for their extraordinary "Services as aforeſaid), what in your wiſdomes you "ſhall thinke fitt, whereby they may bee the better ena- "bled to do his Majeſtie Service hereafter.

"And they ſhall bee bound to pray, &c.

"Richard Birch.
"Edward Wallis.
"Samuell Sternell.
"Dauid Gough.
"Robert Fowlher.
"John Blancks.
"Ralph Braye.
"W. Francklin."

"Ordered, That this Petition bee eſpecially recomended vnto "the Commiſſioners of the Treaſury; and they are deſired from "this Howſe to take it into their particular conſideracon, and to "appointe a ſpeedy redreſſe.

"H. Elſinge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.*"

* This Petition, though without Date, muſt be referred to the Reign of K. Charles I. In a Survey of the Eſtabliſhment at the Tower made A. D. 1623, and preſerved in his Majeſty's State-Paper Office, is a Return of *Forty Warders* at Fourteen Pence per diem as above ſtated. Mr. Elſinge reſigned his Office of Clerk of the Houſe of Commons in December preceding the King's Death, and died himſelf 1654,

Having thus brought the WARDERS, Sir, from the time of their Incorporation into the Body of YEOMEN, to the Period before us, I ſhall now revert to ſome Orders in the Reign of K. James I. regarding them among other Officers of the Tower, from Mr. Aſtle's Manuſcript. They are antecedent in date to the before-cited Letter of Sir William Waade, but that is immaterial: they ſhew the Duty and Diſcipline uſed among them at the time, and have K. James's Sign Manual, counterſigned by Five Lords of the Privy Council *.

"*JAMES* R.

"*Hereafter followe the Articles and Ordnance that the* Kings "*moſt excellent Majeſtie hath ordained and eſtabliſhed the* 18*th* "*day of July, in the* 5*th yeare of his Raigne over England, &c.* "*which his Highneſs hath charged* Sir William Waade, knt. "*Lieftenant of his* Tower *of London, and all the* Yeomen *of* "*his* Guard, *and all other that be appointed to give their daily* "*attendance within the ſaid* Tower *for the ſure keeping of the* "*ſame, to obſerve and keepe upon paines following.*

"Firſt, that none of the ſaid *Yeomen*, ſo appointed, ſhall de- "parte out of the Tower of London, without licence of the ſaid "*Sir William Waade*, or his Deputy, upon paine of forfeiture of "*Twelve Pence* for the firſt default; and the ſecond default "*Three Shillings*; the third default his body to be impriſoned "three daies; and, if he make default the fourth time, to looſe "his Roome for ever, and his Body to be puniſhed at the *King's* "pleaſure.

* What relates to Priſoners, and other Perſons, not immediately connected with the *Warders*, is omitted for the ſake of Brevity.

"Item,

" Item, the ſaid *Sir William Waade*, or his Deputy, ſhall not " give licence to any of the ſaid *Yeomen* (ſo appointed) to depart " out of the ſaid *Tower*, but that they be ſure there ſhall be " remaineing within the ſaid Tower *Twenty-five*, or more of " the ſaid *Yeomen*; and in like wiſe of all other Gunners and " Artificers. And this Order to be kept by *Sir William Waade* " or his Deputy for the ſure keeping of the ſaid *Tower* upon " paine of the *Kings* diſpleaſure.

" Item, the ſaid *Sir William Waade*, or his Deputy, ſhall " ſurely ſee that there be every day ſo many of the ſaid *Yeomen* " as ſhall be thought convenient, never to be under Eight with " Gunners and Artificers, ſurely to keepe the Gates of the ſaid " *Tower* (i. e.) from the firſt opening of the Gates till the laſt " ſhutting; alſo, that every of them ſo appointed, and all other " *Yeomen*, beare in their hands a *Halberd* or *Bill*, whereſoever " they go within the ſaid *Tower*.

" Item, the ſaid *Yeomen*, and all other ſo appointed for the " keeping of the Gates, ſhall not depart from the ſaid Gates, " without the licence of the ſaid *Sir William Waade*, or his De- " puty, nor ſuffer any man, woman, or child, (not dwelling " within the ſaid Tower) to enter within the ſame without li- " cence of the ſaid *Sir William Waade* or his Deputy, during the " time of their wayting at the Gate, except they know them " well, and that the cauſe of their coming thither be good and " needfull, upon paine of Impriſonment during the pleaſure of " the ſaid *Sir William Waade*, and looſeing of *Twelve Pence* for " every ſuch default.

" Item, the ſaid *Yeomen*, and other Gunners and Artificers ſo " appointed, ſhall truly keepe their Night-Watch and Ward, " as the ſaid *Sir William Waade* or his Deputy ſhall appoint and " comand them to do, upon payne of their bodies to bee im-

" priſoned at the will of the ſaid *Sir William Waade*, and looſe-
" ing *Twelve Pence* for their firſt offence; and for the ſecond
" offence to looſe *Twenty Pence*, and two daies his body in priſon;
" and he that thirdly offendeth ſhall looſe his Roome, and his
" body to be puniſhed at the *King's* pleaſure.

" And if it fortune any of the *Warders* Roomes to be voyd,
" the ſaid *Sir William Waade* ſhall as ſoone as he may certifie
" the *King's* Majeſtie thereof, that his Majeſtie may provide
" another in his Roome.

" Alſo, the ſaid *Sir William Waade* ſhall ſee that every of the
" ſaid *Yeomen* of the *Guard*, and all other Gunners and Artificers
" ſo appointed, haue their harneſſe for their bodies within the
" Tower, as it appertaineth for the ſurety of every of them, and
" alſo of the ſaid Tower, and the ſaid *Sir William Waade* ſhall
" ſee this done ere ever he be paid his next Wages.

" After the great Gate of the By-ward is ſhutt in the night
" time, the ſame ſhall not be opened for any Priſoners Servants
" or Wives, nor any other perſon, but with the privity of the
" Leiftenant or his Deputy; but ſuch as have occaſion to come
" in or out to vſe only the little Wicket, where, according to
" auncient cuſtom, two *Warders* ſhall ſtand on each ſide to view
" thoſe that come in or out.

" No *Warder* to change his Day-warding or Night-Watches
" without the privity of the Leiftenant.

" The *Warders* appointed to ward on the hill and in the *Pinke*,
" are not to departe from thence till the Keyes are brought
" up, and to be there againe before the Gates be opened *.

* The Gate of the Tower at Traitors Bridge is mentioned by Dr. Fuller in his Worthies. "There is a Bridge," ſays he, "under which is an Entrance into "the Tower, over againſt *Pink-Gate*." [London p. 199.]—Q. the Etymon? The name ſeems now to have been long worn out; for none of the oldeſt Inhabitants of the Tower, as I am informed, ever heard of it.

" When

" When the Keyes are fetched in the morning by the Watch " for the Night, henceforth that Ward in the day ſhall meete the " ſaid Watch at the opening of the Gates where the *Gentleman* " *Porter* ſhall receaue their names, and ſee they be *Six* for the " Main-Ward, and *Two* for the By-ward; and if any be " wanting or abſent, to certifie the Leiftenant of their Names, " that they may be checked for not performing their Duty; " and after they take the charge upon them, none of them to " departe from their Wards without ſpeciall licence.

" None of thoſe ſervants that are appointed to remaine with " the Priſoners ſhall be admitted to have ordinary recourſe up " and downe in all places of the Tower, nor on the Hill, nor to " ſtay in the Ward-houſe, to obſerve what directions are given " by the Leiftenant to the *Wardours*, whereof may come in- " convenience to his *Majeſties* Service.

" None to be admitted to have Acceſſe vnto any of the " Priſoners Servants, nor to ſpeake with any of them in their " lodgings, but to be ſtayed by the *Wardours* that waite and " give attendance, without the privity of the Leiftenant, or " ſuch as he ſhall appoint in his Abſence.

" Such other auncient Orders for ſearching of the Lockes of " the Gates of the ſeveral Priſons, and calling upon the Priſons " when the Watch is ſett, and in the night when the Watch " do make their rounds, are to be obſerved by the *Wardours* there " as the Lieutenant ſhall give direction.

" If any of the *Yeomen* [*Warders*] ſhall at any time reveale by " himſelfe; or by any means directly or indirectly to any Pri- " ſoners any Direction, Charge, or Comandment, which they " or any of them ſhall receaue of the Leiftenant, he ſhall not " onely looſe his place, but be impriſoned during his *Majeſtie's* " pleaſure.

" (1) Tho.

" (1) Tho. Elleſmere, Canc. " (3) T. Dorſett,
" (2) E. Worceſter. " (4) H. Northampton.
" (5) Salisbury."

Thus much, Sir, I have found myſelf under a neceſſity to trouble you with reſpecting the WARDERS. It may here be added, that they are at this day ſworn into Office by the Style of " YEOMEN *of the* GUARD *Extraordinary*, and YEOMEN-" WARDERS of the Tower *in Ordinary*," by Warrant from the CONSTABLE *of the* TOWER, who has the ſole and uncontrolled Appointment of them.

I ſhall now return to the general Subject, with obſerving, that from an Account of the Houſhold of the Year 1615, in the College of Arms, it appears expreſſly, that the CAPTAIN *of the Yeomen* at this Period had no Fee or Salary from the KING, his only Allowance being *a Gown*, as an official Habit *. It might be for this reaſon that ſome Place of Emolument was frequently joined with the Poſt of *Captain* antecedent to the Reſtoration, as has appeared in ſeveral Inſtances: and where we have formerly ſeen that the *Vice-Chamberlainſhip* was held with it occaſionally; it might perhaps be more properly ſtated, by ſaying, that it was itſelf ſecondarily annexed to the *Vice-Chamberlainſhip*, which Poſt, at the time of making

(1) Sir Tho. Egerton, created Baron Elleſmere, 1606.

(2) Edward (Somerſet) Earl of Worceſter, Maſter of the Horſe, and a Commiſſioner for executing the Office of Earl Marſhal.

(3) The Lord Treaſurer.

(4) Henry (Howard) Earl of Northampton, Lord Privy Seal.

(5) Robert Cecil Earl of Saliſbury, Secretary of State.

* Mr. Peck tells us it was of the Price of 14 l. and therefore muſt have been richly ornamented, according to the Value of Money at that time. [Deſiderata Curioſa, 4to. v. I. p. 59.]

the

the Eltham Statutes (1526), carried with it the ſalary of 100 Marks. The ſame may be ſaid of the Lieutenantcy of the Tower in the Caſe of Sir Hugh Vaughan [temp. Hen VII. *]

The CAPTAIN is at preſent, *ex officio*, immediately admitted of the Privy Council: but ſuch precipitation is an Honour rather of a late Date; for the *Viſcount Fenton*, who held the Poſt of CAPTAIN of the Corps from the Acceſſion of K. James I. 1603 to the year 1617, was not made a Privy Counſellor till the year 1609 †.

After this Period, Sir, nothing tranſpires reſpecting the Corps of YEOMEN till the Reſtoration, when, having lain in a torpid State during the Commonwealth, together with all other regal Appendages, it revived, in a few Years, with a Degree of Eclat never known before, and received a larger Appointment of Officers than was allowed even to the BAND of *Gentlemen Penſioners*.

The CAPTAIN, inſtead of a *Gown*, only, had, in the Year 1660, the more ſubſtantial Emolument of a Salary of *One Thouſand Pounds* per annum: and the Pay of the CLERK of the CHEQUE was advanced, from *Twenty* Pounds, to *One Hundred and Fifty Pounds* per annum ‡. The Number of YEOMEN was *Two Hundred:* and thus the Eſtabliſhment reſted till the Year 1668, when the KING was pleaſed to regulate it by reducing the Number of the YEOMEN to *One Hundred*, and by

* See the Appendix.

† Camdeni Annalium Apparatus.

‡ The *Captain* was *George* [Goring] *Earl of Norwich*:—and *Richard Smith, Eſq.* was *Clerk* of the *Cheque*. [Lord Chamberlain's Office-Books.] The Allowance now made to this Officer might perhaps govern the Quantum afterwards appointed to the *Corporals* or *Exempts*.

adding at the ſame time more OFFICERS, the firſt Purpoſe operating in aid of the Second; though, at the ſame time, ſuch ſtep, ultimately, pointed at Retrenchment, as the *Supernumerary* YEOMEN ſhould die.

The *Officers* then appointed, and ſworn in on the 12th of Auguſt, were,

A LIEUTENANT, with 500 l. per annum *.

An ENSIGN, with 300 l. per annum †; and

Four Corporals (or EXEMPTS), with 150 l. per annum each ‡.

With regard to the Reduction of the Number of the *Yeomen*, it ſhould ſeem that the Plan had been for ſome Years in contemplation; as it is evident, from the following Order of Council, that the *Corps* had not its Complement of Men at the time; but that the Places of ſeveral *Yeomen*, then lately deceaſed, had not been filled up.

At the Court at WHITEHALL, *the* 15*th of February*, 1668.

"His Majeſty intending to make ſome Alteration concern-
"ing the YEOMEN of his GUARD, it was this day Ordered,
"that the Lord *Viſcount Grandiſon*, CAPTAIN of his Majeſty's

* Hon. Thomas Howard, who, I conceive, was the ſecond Son of Theophilus Earl of Suffolk. [Lord Chamberlain's Office-Books.].

† Edward Savile, Eſq. [Idem.]

‡ Mr. Aſton—Mr. Horton—Mr. Sadlington—and Mr. Gardiner. [Idem.] It has been inſinuated, with what truth I cannot ſay, that the diſpoſal of the laſt-mentioned Four Appointments were oblique Favours conferred upon certain Ladies well known to have had no ſmall intereſt in the Court of K. Charles II. If ſo, theſe Poſts were not gratuitouſly beſtowed *ab initio*.

Notwithſtanding that the Corps of *Yeomen* has had an *Enſign* from the above period, yet I never could find any, the ſmalleſt, Trace of a *Standard*, or a *Banner*.

"Guard,

"GUARD, do cauſe to appear before him All the *Yeomen* of "the *Guard* in the laſt Week of the Month of March next, "and out of all the YEOMEN *now remaining alive* to ſelect "and chuſe out *One Hundred* of them, ſuch as he conceives "moſt proper to give their continual Attendance upon his Ma- "jeſty's Perſon, which *Hundred* ſhall at that time be ſettled "and provided for according to a new Eſtabliſhment, and the "remaining part of the whole Number ſhall likewiſe continue "his Majeſty's Servants in ſuch manner, and with ſuch *Al-* "*lowances*, as ſhall be thought fit and declared."

The Order of Council, conſequent upon the above, does not appear in the Office-Regiſters: but it may be collected, in effect, from the Recital of it in a Petition delivered by ſome of theſe ſupernumerary *Yeomen* (on the Subject of Arrears) in the Year 1685, wherein they ſtate, that his then late Majeſty A.D. 1668—"By Order of Council reduced his ſaid *Guard* "from *Two* Hundred to *One* Hundred to be in preſent Waiting, "and the other to be at *Half-Pay* [viz. 15 l. per annum] to be "paid concurrently with thoſe in Waiting, and to be reſtored "to Waiting as others died off."

What the actual number of *Yeomen* thus put upon Half-Pay in 1668 amounted to, we know not; but we find that ſome of them ſurvived the Retrenchment upwards of Twenty Years; for a Petition was again preferred to the Privy Council, for Payment of Arrrears, by Five of them, in the Year 1690.

When all thoſe *Yeomen* on Half-Pay were either dead, or reinſtated by Succeſſion, the *Corps* became in all points what it is at preſent.

The Term *Exempt*, Sir, which has occurred to us in the new Eſtabliſhment above given, is manifeſtly borrowed from the French *Gardes du Corps*, though Pere Daniel confeſſes him-

ſelf to be at a loſs to account for its meaning, unleſs, ſays he, thoſe Officers are *exempted* from certain ordinary Duties, ſuch as Mounting Guard, &c. Something more ſatisfactory, however, may be learnt ſimply from a compariſon of thoſe in France and in England, both as to Rank and Service. P. Daniel admits them to have, in France, the Rank of *Captain*; for they are ſtyled in their Commiſſions "CAPITAINES EXEMPTS *des Gardes du Corps*," and which, he tells us, they, have enjoyed ever ſince the Reign of Henry IV *. Richelet, in his Dictionary, ſays that the *Exempt* is an Officer who commands in the abſence of the *Lieutenant* and *Enſign*; which will agree very well with what I am going to ſuggeſt, as to military ſubordination. Another Circumſtance will bring them ſtill nearer together; for the French *Exempt* of the *Garde du Corps* has the charge of the *Night-Watch* †, and thus, collaterally, our *Exempt* is a reſident Officer, who ſleeps in the Palace (St. James's) at this Day, as Commander of the *Yeomen* on Duty, which no other Officer of the Corps does. The Exempt has therefore a delegated Authority, purely by the Abſence of his Superiors in the Corps, during whoſe Preſence his Power had before been abſorbed ‡.

The military Term *Exempt*, introduced at the Reſtoration, firſt had place (where it is ſtill to be found) in our *Horſe-Guards*, which two Troops have likewiſe peculiar Subaltern Officers, appellatively from the French, viz. *Brigadiers* and

* Hiſt. de la Milice Françoiſe II. 141.

† L'Etat de la France 1682.

‡ In ſpeaking of an *Exempt*, we adopt the French Pronunciation, and in conformity to it now uſually write *Exon*.

Sub-

Sub-Brigadiers. For the greater perſpicuity I will place the two Corps collaterally, that their correſponding Ranks may appear at one View; from whence, I think, it will be evident, that, when K. Charles II. (in the Year 1668) added other Officers to the CAPTAIN of the YEOMEN, he had the two Troops of *Horſe-Guards* in his Eye: for the Number of *Exempts* (viz. *Four*) in each of theſe Bodies is the ſame, and their civil Rank the ſame, both being *Eſquires* by their Commiſſions.

Horſe Guards.		*Yeomen of the Guard.*
CAPTAIN.	and *Colonel* in the Army.	CAPTAIN.
LIEUTENANT.	and *Lieutenant Colonel* in the Army.	LIEUTENANT.
CORNET or GUIDON *.	and *Major* in the Army.	ENSIGN.
EXEMPT.	and *Captain* in the Army.	EXEMPT.

The above double Rank of our *Horſe-Guards* is manifeſtly adduced from Spain, where, according to Major William Dalrymple, "The *Captains* of the *Guards* have the Rank of "*Colonel*; the *Lieutenants*, of *Lieutenant Colonel*; and the *Sub-*"*Lieutenants*, of *Captain* †."

I would not be underſtood to inſinuate, from the above comparative Arrangement, that either the *Officers* of the YEOMEN, or even of the *Gentlemen Penſioners*, ever had concurrent Rank in the Army. I believe, they never had; and the Reaſon aſſigned has been, that they have always been upon the Eſtabliſhment of the KING's *Civil Liſt*, and neither included in the

* Theſe Officers were, primitively, the Bearers of the *Inſignia* of their reſpective Troops.

† See his Travels through Spain and Portugal, A. D. 1774. 4to London. 1777, p. 64.

Eſtimates

Eſtimates for the Pay of the Army, nor within the Mutiny-Act, having been ſubject only to the interior Regulations of their reſpective CAPTAINS in particular, or of *Houſhold Ordinances* in general.

It has been otherwiſe with the OFFICERS of the BATTLE-AXE GUARDS in *Ireland* *.

The EXEMPTS of the YEOMEN, however, were not without another Parallel in the Year 1668; for Henrietta-Maria the Queen Dowager of K. Charles I. upon her return hither A. D. 1662, retained a Body-Guard of Twenty-four Perſons, under the Command of a *Captain*, a *Lieutenant*, and an EXEMPT †.

To bring the *Exempts* of the *Horſe-Guards*, and of the YEOMEN, ſtill cloſer together, it may be obſerved, that at one

* A late *Captain* of the *Yeomen*, the Lord Viſcount Falmouth, it is true, was a General Officer; but that was incidental to his Lordſhip, among many of the Nobility, who, raiſing Forces in the Rebellion of the Year 1745, in their reſpective Counties, were complimented with ſuch Rank.

† Dr. Chamberlayne firſt publiſhed his "Angliæ Notitia" or Preſent State early in the Year 1669, before the Death of the Queen-Mother, which happened in the enſuing Auguſt, wherein is the following Account of this Branch of her Majeſty's Eſtabliſhment:

"A Captain.
"A Lieutenant.
"An *Exempt*.

"Twenty-four Gentlemen Soldiers in black Velvet Caſſocks *, and golden "embroidered Badges, marching or waiting about the Perſon of her Majeſty. "When in her Sedan, or at Chapel, or at Table, or in her Coach with *two* "Horſes, [they attended] on foot with *Halberts*; and when in her Coach "with *Six* Horſes, on horſeback with *Carbines:* in all places, within Doors as "without, *covered*."

* A Caſſock originally ſignified a Horſe-man's looſe coat. [v. Mr. Steevens's note to "All's well that Ends well." Act IV. Sc. III.] It ſeems to be the Spaniſh *Caſáca*.

time

time both of them carried *Batons* in common with the ſuperior Officers of their reſpective Corps, a Badge introduced from the French Practice, as appears from Publications regarding that Court. As to our own, it is within the Remembrance of ſeveral Officers of the *Horſe-Guards* now living, that till a little while after the Acceſſion of his preſent Majeſty an EXEMPT, and a *Subaltern Officer* of the Troop on Duty, appeared at the Court with *Batons*, on every Levée and Drawing-Room Day, together with the Firſt and Second in Command, now known by the Names of the *Gold-Stick* and *Silver-Stick* *.

But this is not all that we have to contend with; for theſe Officers are likewiſe ſtyled CORPORALS in their Commiſſions, a Term which, in common Acceptation, carries with it ſomething derogatory, but which, however, I hope to be able to reconcile.

Though it has been ſuggeſted that our Troops of *Horſe-Guards* are officer'd, after the French manner, we may perhaps be ultimately obliged to appeal to Spain for numberleſs military Terms. Thus our *Cornet*, and the French *Cornette*, are both adopted from the Spaniſh *Cornéta* [a Standard]—; and I mention this Circumſtance, becauſe I think it will lead us, through the ſame medium, to the reaſon why the EXEMPTS of the YEOMEN are called in their Commiſſions by our preſent humble Title of CORPORALS. This Word is, in fact, the Spaniſh *Caporal*, the Periphraſis of which (according to Capt. Stevens in his Dictionary) is *Cabo de Eſquadra*, or the Head of a Party: from whence we ſeem to have tranſplanted it, and then corrupted it into *Corporal*, to expreſs a non-commiſſioned Officer,

* Theſe *Sticks* (or *Batons*) are ſuch as have been deſcribed in the Second Part of this Work.

in

in regimental ſubordination, who has the occaſional Command of a ſmall Detachment: Thus the Spaniſh *Caporal* carries with it primitively no Indignity, though we have, of late Years, degraded the Term; but which may, nevertheleſs, be reſtored to honour, even among ourſelves, when we ſhall have obſerved how it was formerly applied. It is ſcarcely probable that this Appellation, had it been at the time humiliating, would have been given, by royal Authority, to thoſe who, as I have ſaid, are called *Eſquires* in their Appointments, while the non-commiſſioned Officer, to whom we annex the general idea, is two degrees below the Rank of a *Gentleman*.

Now, Sir, with reſpect to the Term *Corporal*, as formerly appropriated in England to a liberal military Rank, we find that in the Armament ſent by Q. Elizabeth to aid the Scots againſt the French (A. D. 1560) Holinſhed ſpeaks of the CORPORALS, whereby he means *Captains*, they being mentioned next after the *Majors* *. Stowe, likewiſe, where he gives, in detail, the naval Force fitted out againſt Portugal (A. D. 1588) likewiſe ſpeaks of Five *Captains* of *Ships*, whom he calls CORPORALS *of the Squadrons*. Each of theſe, I conceive, had a few Ships under his immediate Command, and was a *Cabo de Eſquadra*, or what we now compreſs in the Word *Commodore*: add to this, that, among the ſuperior Officers, he ſpecifies the *Colonels*, and *Lieutenant Colonels*, of the *Squadrons*. Nay further, CORPORALS in the *Fleet* are again mentioned ſo lately as in the Year 1635, in the Commiſſion of High Admiral conferred by K. Charles I. on Algernon Earl of Northumberland †.

* Theſe were called *Corporals of the Field*, to diſtinguiſh them from thoſe in the *Fleet*. They were equal in rank to a *Captain of Horſe*, and operated as *Aids-de-Camp* do at preſent. [See the Notes of Dr. Farmer and Mr. Tyrwhitt to "Love's Labour's Loſt." Act III. Sc. I. in the Variorum Edition of Shakeſpeare.]

† Rymer's Fœdera. Tom. XIX. p 762.

Upon the whole of this Article, let it be obſerved, that, in conformity with the Spaniſh Officer of the above denomination, the CORPORAL *in Waiting* has occaſionally the like Command of a Party of the *Yeomen* when the King goes publickly abroad.

We will now, Sir, revert to what happened in conſequence of the above Regulation in the Year 1668, which will oblige me to trouble you with an Extract (longer than I could wiſh) from the Houſhold Ordinances of K. Charles II. relating to the *Great Chamber*. The preciſe Date of them is wanting; but they evidently iſſued very ſoon after the *Corps* was new-modelled. The Rules therein preſcribed are in great meaſure obſerved at this Day.

" *FOR our* Yeomen of the Guard *we have made a new eſtabliſh-*
" *ment, there being added to the* CAPTAIN, *a* Lieutenant, *an* Enſign
" *and* four Corporals *being* Commiſſioned Officers; *and we have*
" *continued the* Clerk of the Cheque, *and* One Hundred Yeomen *of*
" *our* Guard, *to be in conſtant Waiting as followeth. One of the Com-*
" *miſſioned Officers to be always in Waiting to receive Orders and the*
" Word *daily from us**. Forty Yeomen *to be conſtantly upon Duty,*
" *as*

* This is now diſcontinued, *The Word* not being communicated to any *Officer* either of the *Yeomen* or of the *Gentlemen Penſioners*. It may not, however, be amiſs to ſay ſomething more than is generally known concerning the preſent mode of communicating the *Word*; and being now a Matter of *Ceremony* belonging to the Court, it may not improperly have a Place in a Work of this Sort. How the *Word* was circulated in the Reign of K. Charles II. cannot well be known; but one is at liberty, from theſe Ordinances, to infer that it was more generally diſtributed than at preſent, extending, as we here ſee, to the YEOMEN of the *Guard*, and moſt probably to the *Gentlemen Penſioners*, though I have never obſerved any mention of it.

" *as well to attend upon Our* PERSON *abroad, as to do the Service of*
" *the Houſe; all which* Officers *and* Yeomen *ſhall be ſworn to obey*
" *Our* Lord Chamberlain *or* Vice Chamberlain *as formerly, and*
" *all Orders that ſhall come from them: and all Orders that ſhall*
" *be delivered from Our* Lord Chamberlain, *or* Vice Chamberlain,
" *by themſelves, or the* Gentlemen-Uſhers *in their Abſence, for Our*
" *Service, ſhall be delivered to the* Officer *in* Waiting, *who,*
" *upon ſuch notice given, ſhall appoint what number of Our* Guard
" *is deſired in ſuch place, and for ſuch Services as ſhall be deſired.*
" *And, if no* Officer *ſhall be preſent, a* Yeoman-Uſher, *with the*
" Yeomen, *ſhall go and perform the Service, according as he ſhall*
" *be required by Our* Lord Chamberlain, Vice Chamberlain,
" *or, by their Order, by the* Gentleman-Uſher Daily-Waiter,
" *upon all Occaſions as Our Service ſhall require: And if no* Officer
" *be upon the* Guard, *nor* Yeoman-Uſher, *then the* Yeomen *ſhall*
" *obey the Directions of the* Gentleman-Uſher, *that Our Service*
" *be not neglected. The* Yeomen *of* our Guard *are to Attend in*
" *our*

As to it's original Uſe, there is ſcarcely a neceſſity to obſerve, that in the Infancy of Military Diſcipline, and particularly before an Uniformity in the national Dreſs of an Army was adopted, ſomething whereby to diſtinguiſh a Friend from a Foe,—to diſcover ſuſpected Spies,—and to prevent Surprizes, was neceſſary:—this could not be better done than by a mental Secret contained in the *Watch-Word.*

Where there is no immediately grand Urgency for ſuch *Word*, yet it has a local Uſe, which ſtill remains, ſufficient to check the Deſigns of diſaffected Soldiery where Inſurrections may be apprehended; for, by a ſudden Change of the *Word*, concealed Traitors may be detected, and inimical Deſigns fruſtrated.

At preſent I am conſidering ſuch Communication as a little Ceremonial. There are now daily *two* different *Words* in uſe, the one ſecretly given to the Officers on Duty at the Court, and the other as ſecretly conveyed to the Guard in the City poſted at the Tower, which *Words* are contained in a Liſt privately

" *our* Great Chamber, *as has been accuſtomed. And, becauſe their*
" *Service importeth not only the Safety of Our* Perſon, *but the Hon-*
" *our of Our* Court, *We Ordain, that none hereafter be ſworn and*
" *enrolled of that* Band *that is not of* Tall Perſonage, Strong,
" Active, *and of* Manly Preſence; *and that ſuch, according to*
" *Our Prerogative, be choſen out of the Servants of our Nobility,*
" *if we pleaſe, or where elſe they may be found: and that they*
" *be* freely placed, *and enjoined to execute their Service in Per-*
" *ſon, and not to be excuſed by the Attendance of extraordinary*
" *hired Men, as ſometimes hath been done. And for the ſetting*
" *the* Watch at Night, *which formerly was by the* Eſquires of
" the Body, *Our pleaſure is, that from henceforward the* Watch
" *be ſett by the* Officer of the Guard in Waiting, *who ſhall*
" *deliver the Names of the ſaid* Watch *in Writing to the* Eſquire
" of our Body, *to be by him carried into Our* Bed Chamber, *as*
" *heretofore was done by them.*

vately iſſued by the War-Office prior to the Commencement of every Month, Copies of which are delivered to the KING, and the *Commanding Officers* on the ſeveral Duties reſpectively. On Days of Ceremony, previouſly to the *Levée* or *Drawing-Room*, the *Word* of the Day is given, by the KING himſelf, to the *Officer* of each Diviſion, who communicates it to the Troops under his Command. On other Days, when the KING is not ſeen in State, the *Officers* give the *Words* themſelves from the correſponding Liſt; and, being Names of Places, are ſo very arbitrary that they cannot be known, or even ſuſpected.

The Words for any given Month are arranged in this Manner in the Liſts delivered from the War-office.

The Word for ..... 17 ...

Days		*For the Court.*	*For the City.*
Monday.	1.	—— Canterbury.	—— Brentford.
Tueſday.	2.	—— Huntingdon.	—— Graveſend.
Wedneſday.	3.	—— Oxford.	—— Barnet.
Thurſday.	4.	—— Portſmouth.	—— Colcheſter.
&c.		&c.	&c.

" *The* Officer *of* Our Guard *in* Waiting *ſhall cauſe ſtrict*
" *Guard to be kept at the Door of Our* Guard-Chamber * *and*
" Preſence-Chamber, *and other Places in Our Houſe, as from*
" *time to time We ſhall Command, duly obſerving the Orders We*
" *ſhall ſet up and ordain in Our Houſe; and they ſhall take care*
" *that the* Yeomen-Uſhers *ſee that the* Chamber *be kept clean*
" *and ſweet, and that they cauſe the door to be carefully kept, not*
" *ſuffering any Footmen to enter into the* Chamber, *except* Our *Foot-*
" *men, and the Footmen of Our* deareſt Conſort the QUEEN, *Our*
" Dear Brother *and* Siſter *the* DUKE *and* DUTCHESS OF YORK,
" *and our* Couſin PRINCE RUPERT, *and all* Pages. *Theſe are per-*
" *mitted to ſtay there, but to paſs no further; nor any Idle, Mean,*
" *or Unknown, Perſons to enter therein. And if any of the Foot-*
" *men of the Gentlemen that attend us, or others that are come*
" *into Our Houſe, come to ſpeak with their Maſters, that they be*
" *not ſuffered to paſs through the* Chamber, *but that the* Yeoman-
" Uſher *ſend a* Groom, *or a* Page *of the Preſence-Chamber, unto*
" *the* Gentleman-Uſher Quarter-Waiter *attending at the* Pre-
" ſence-Chamber-Door, *to acquaint his Maſter therewith, who*
" *is to come out to him to ſpeak with him, and not to ſend for his*
" *Footman into the ſaid Room. And that after Our* Meat *is ſerved*
" *up, they ſuffer none to enter into the ſaid* Chamber, *or remain*
" *there, only ſuch as have Service to do within; or as they ſhall have*
" *Order from the* Gentlemen-Uſhers *to let in; or Perſons of good*
" *Faſhion and good Appearance that have a Deſire to ſee* Us *at*
" *Dinner, and not any inferior, mean, or unknown People: All*
" *which Perſons ſhall be admitted into our* Preſence Chamber, *at*
" *the Diſcretion of the* Gentleman-Uſher Daily-Waiter, *or, in*
" *his Abſence, the* Gentleman-Uſher Quarter-Waiter.

* An Error of the Tranſcriber, for *Great*-Chamber, as it is before called.

"*If there ſhall happen any Diſorder or Quarrell amongſt any of* "*our Servants in the* Great-Chamber, *the* Officer in Waiting, "*the* Clerk of the Checque, *or the* Yeomen-Uſhers *in their Ab-* "*ſence, are to diſcharge them of their Attendance, till the Cauſe* "*be heard and puniſhed by the* Lord Chamberlain.

"*If any of the* Yeomen *of the Chamber, that keep the Door,* "*be abuſed by any, The* Officer in Waiting, Clerk of the "Checque, *or* Yeoman-Uſher, *ſhall inform the* Lord Cham- "berlain, *or in his Abſence the* Vice Chamberlain, *that Example* "*may be made of him or them that ſhall do the ſame.*"

The Ordinances above-given being ſo full and expreſs to every purpoſe, and wherein no mention is made of the *Yeomen* of the *Crown*, I conceive that they were laid aſide either on the Reform of 1668, if they did not fall ſooner; for I do not recollect that they have occurred ſince the Demiſe of Q. Elizabeth.

But theſe Ordinances, Sir, may not paſs without a Comment which applies even to the preſent Day. What is called the *Guard-Chamber* at St. James's is well known to every one who frequents the Court, and from the YEOMEN who appear there on Duty, added to its military Ornaments, is naturally accepted as ſuch. It may therefore ſeem an incoherent Aſſertion to ſay, that the Guard-Chamber *is not* the Guard-Chamber; and yet ſo it will prove; for its Title is, The *Great-Chamber*. To ſpeak ſtill more properly, we ſhould call it *The Great Chamber of Preſence*, as Mr. Strype ſtyles it from ſome MSS. which he had ſeen, wherein it is ſaid that in the Year 1559 the French Ambaſſadors were entertained at Whitehall with a ſupper, when "the Hall, and the *Great Chamber* "*of Preſence*, were hung with very rich cloth of Arras, and a "cloth of State*." The Arrangement of State-Rooms above

* Strype's Annals, I. 189.

Stairs

Stairs in Royal Palaces *(de ſuite)*, uniformly conſiſts of The *Great Chamber*, The *Preſence-Chamber*, The *Privy Chamber*, The *Withdrawing-Room*, and The *Bed-Chamber*. Enough has been ſaid of theſe interior Rooms on a former Occaſion *; but the Subject did not extend outwardly to the *Chamber* of which we are now ſpeaking. In this Room, as a Chamber of State, our Kings in former times occaſionally dined, and which was regulated, as to etiquette, by ſpecial Ordinances like thoſe which iſſued for the *Privy Chamber*, &c. Theſe Days were called "*Days of Eſtate in the Great Chamber*," for the Obſervance of which, in point of form, there are ſome Articles preſerved of the Reign of K. Hen. VII. made in his 19th Year †. The High Officers, as the King's Repreſentatives, at Entertainments of the Repreſentatives of other Kings, alſo generally dined in this Chamber. The Ordinances of the Year 1627 ſay, that "When the Lord Chamberlain ſhall eat in that [the "Great] *Chamber*, it be kept according to the old Order:" and in thoſe for the Queen's Apartments 1631, it is enjoyned, that her Majeſty's "Lord Chamberlain *dine* and *ſup* in her *Great* "*Chamber* on Sundays and Collar-days." On the *Creation* of a *Peer*, a ceremonious Dinner was anciently given by the King to the Party, and it was frequently ſerved in this *Great Chamber*, which, till very lately, had Eight *Sewers* appropriated to it, who officiated on ſuch Occaſions ‡. It has ſtill Ten *Grooms* belonging to it, who are Meſſengers of the Houſhold, under the Command of the Lord Chamberlain, in the King's Service; and, were it not for theſe ſurviving Officers, who are (from their Station there) denominated *Grooms of the Great-*

* Curialia, Part I. Diſſert. II.

† W. W. in Coll. Arm. and in Bibl. Harl. N° 642.

‡ Aboliſhed 1782. Their Title was *Sewers* of the *Great-Chamber*.

Chamber,

Chamber, the old and proper Title of this Apartment would now be totally abſorbed in that of the *Guard-Chamber*.

If we revert to the Statutes of Eltham (Temp. Henry VIII.) in the Article relating to the King's and Queen's "*Outward Chambers*," we ſhall find it is commanded that "The *Yeomen* "*Uſhers*," and other "*Yeomen*," who have the Charge of the "*Great Chamber*," give their continual attendance.

In the Reign of K. James I. we have ſeen that the *Yeomen* on Duty are enjoined diligently to keep Guard in the *Great Chamber*; and particularly to clear the Room of all Strangers at certain Hours; that his Royal Highneſs *Prince Henry*, who reſided at St. James's, might "quietly take his Repaſts in "the *Preſence Chamber*," which, as has been obſerved, is the Room interiorly adjoining *.

The Orders juſt now given at large from the Reign of K. Charles II. ſhew that the Room in queſtion preſerved its primitive nature at that period, and that it then had a *Haut-pas* at leaſt (and I preſume a Cloth of Eſtate) before it was furniſhed with Arms as at preſent; for the *Uſhers* are there ordered to keep the *Haut-pas* clean: and it is poſitively ſaid that "The "*Yeomen* attend in our *Great Chamber*, as has been accuſtomed."

Anciently the Houſes of our greater Nobility contained a Room of State above Stairs called the *Great-Chamber*, wherein the Lord and his principal Gueſts dined, while Perſons of ſubordinate Rank were conſigned to the Hall below among the Officers of his Houſhold †: nay many Houſes of inferior note in the Country, at the beginning of this Century, had their *Dining-Room* above Stairs, which long preſerved its name, after it had

* The *King* at that time kept his Court at Whitehall.

† See the Northumberland Houſhold Book, pp. 309. 419.

been

been converted to other uſes *. This Room, whenever it had any pretenſions to ſo high a Title, was called the *Great-Chamber*; for the Truth of which Aſſertion we need only have Recourſe to Shakeſpeare, who has preſerved Traits of ancient Manners equally with Hiſtorians. *Maſter Slender* in the *Merry Wives of Windſor* is repreſented as a Gentleman poſſeſſed of an Eſtate of 300 Pounds per Annum; now, Sir, this very Gentleman ſpeaks of his *Great-Chamber*; for where Piſtol is queſtioned by Sir J. Falſtaff about the picking of Maſter Slender's Pocket of his Purſe, Slender replies—

> "Ay, by theſe Gloves, did he; or I would I might never
> "come in mine own *Great-Chamber* again †."

Nay more; Mr. Bernard Gilpin, that moſt exemplary Divine, and the Rector of Houghton-le-Spring, who died 1583, mentions expreſſly in his Will, his "*Great-Chamber* above "Stairs over the Parlour" in his Rectorial Houſe, and which he deſcribes as a Room of Entertainment ‡.

To return to the Court, Sir. From hence we ſee that the *Yeomen Uſher* and the *Guard* of *Yeomen* on Duty are not now placed where we find them, becauſe the Chamber in queſtion has ultimately become the *Guard-Room*; but becauſe it actually ſtill is *The Great-Chamber*: they being a detached Party draughted from the Main Body for the purpoſe. This *Chamber* once ſo honourably and hoſpitably occupied is now entirely devoted to

* What originated from State in the Country aroſe from Neceſſity in London, where the principal Room on the firſt Floor is ſtill called the *Dining Room*, becauſe the Ground-Floor was antiently occupied by a Shop and its Appendages.

† Act. I. Sc. 1.

‡ See his Life, publiſhed by the Rev. Wm. Gilpin, 1753.

the

the *Yeomen*, the *Grooms* and *Meſſengers*, that are in cloſe Attendance: a Guard of the former has always ſlept in it; but, while it preſerved its Dignity as the *Great Chamber*, the Beds were placed at night and diſplaced in the Morning, as in thoſe Chambers where other Officers ſlept; though now the Beds are ſtationary, being contained in the large Cheſts which we ſee in it. The Caſe is the ſame on the Queen's Side, and the Arrangement of the State Apartments exactly correſponds. If then you aſk where is the *Guard Chamber* at St. James's?—I anſwer there is none; and that the *Yeomen*, not on actual Duty, are at liberty to diſpoſe of themſelves as they ſhall think proper.

In the laſt Year of the Reign of K. Charles II. there was a Review upon Putney-Heath (Oct. 1. 1684) of the KING's Forces, including, as State-Guards, the whole Band of *Gentlemen Penſioners*, and the *Hundred* YEOMEN by Name, diſtinguiſhing the *Fifteen* USHERS from the reſt. The YEOMEN are deſcribed as being armed, *Fifty* with *Arquebuſes*, and *Fifty* with *Partiſans*. The Roll was printed and publiſhed by authority at the time, and is the beſt poſſible Evidence of the State of the Corps at that Period *.

We muſt not, however, diſmiſs this Reign without attending for a moment to the WARDERS of the *Tower*, who, at the cloſe of it, underwent a ſimilar Reform to that which happened to the YEOMEN at it's Commencement; for in May, 1683, the number of WARDERS was reduced from *Forty* to *Twenty-four* by Survivorſhip, the Sixteen firſt Vacancies being ordered not to be filled up. The WARDERS, in the February

* No Notice is taken of the *Warders* of the *Tower*, as being, perhaps, peculiarly appropriated to that Garriſon.

preceding, had petitioned for long *Arrears* and new *Cloathing*, which happening at a time when a general Retrenchment was in meditation, their Caſe was refered to the *Lord Dartmouth*, *Maſter General of the Ordnance*, for his Report to the KING in Council of what he thought proper ſhould be done, both as to the Reform itſelf, as far as it concerned the *Tower*, and likewiſe regarding the Subjects of the Petition. The *Lord Dartmouth*, accordingly, in the May following, made his Report, wherein he ſtates, as his opinion, that ſince the *Tower* had been garriſoned by the *Foot-Guards*, a leſs number of WARDERS became ſufficient for watching at the Gates, and attending on Priſoners. His Lordſhip then propoſed to reduce the number from *Forty* to *Twenty-four*, though not in a violent manner; but, in conſideration of their having purchaſed their Places, that, as the WARDERS died, no new Appointments ſhould be made, till the number ſhould ſink to *Twenty-four*. This awakened the attention of the *Lieutenant* of the *Tower* (at that time I preſume the chief Officer) as militating againſt his Intereſt, and whereby he ſhould loſe a conſiderable Perquiſite ariſing from the Diſpoſal of the Sixteen firſt Vacancies. To this his *Majeſty* was pleaſed to declare, that the *Lieutenant* ſhould have a competent Recompence: but it proved a weak Aſſurance; for the KING died in leſs than a Year and an Half; ſoon after which, for what reaſon does not appear, things took a very different turn.

As to the Article of *Cloathing*, the *Lord Dartmouth* reported that the WARDERS had not received any *Cloathing* for *Three Years*, and recommended their being new-cloathed at that time, and thenceforth annually. In theſe points the KING concurred, and ordered care to be taken for the Payment of their Arrears: but the Demiſe of the Crown intervening, we

know not the Reſult upon the whole; though, from what paſſed early in the next Reign, little ſeems to have been effectively done *.

We come now to the ſhort Reign of K. James II. The Number of YEOMEN has never varied ſince the Regulation of the Year 1668, by which it was reduced to *One Hundred*; although the Number of the WARDERS of the *Tower*, as we have ſeen, has undergone a Retrenchment: but its Reſtoration to the Standard of *Forty*, as it ſtood in the Reign of the *firſt* JAMES, and as it reſts at preſent, is not very remote. The great and ſevere general Reform, intended at the cloſe of the Reign of K. Charles II. as before ſuggeſted, devolved upon his Brother K. James II. at his Acceſſion. His Coronation, it is true, was magnificent in a very high Degree, but it was a momentary Splendour; and all ſtate ſunk, from that time, like a Meteor, to riſe no more. There was ſcarcely a Body of Officers which was not in part reduced, and ſome even totally aboliſhed, after they had ſerved the purpoſe of that Cavalcade. The *Corps* of YEOMEN was indeed preſerved entire as to actual number, although it is to be apprehended that the *Fifteen* USHERS might then be brought down to *Eight* (the preſent Complement), which would afford a ſaving of Seventy Pounds per annum:— a Sum trivial in itſelf, on ſo large a Scale; but ſomething in the aggregate ‡.

* Extracted from the Regiſter-Books of the Council-office.

† The Pay of an *Uſher* was, as at preſent, 10l. per annum more than that of an *Ordinary Yeoman*.

A Word or two in this Reign, however, concerns the *Warders* of the Tower. Arrears were due both to them, and to the *Yeomen* on Half-Pay; and accordingly they exhibited their reſpective Petitions to the King and Council (1685), which were referred to the Treaſury for Conſideration and Redreſs. The caſe of the WARDERS embraced a double grievance; for their *Cloathing* had not been renewed ſince the Year 1683, though a peremptory Order had then been made for their being ſupplied annually. Freſh Orders were accordingly given, that new *Cloathing* ſhould be immediately provided, and repeated every Year.

Another circumſtance is rather memorable in the Department of the *Warders*, which occurred in the Year 1688: for the tide turned againſt the principal Officer of the Tower, who in the late Reign had been, by royal Sanction, permitted to ſell the Poſt of *Warder* upon every vacancy. No palpable Reaſon appears for the Reſumption of this privilege, though there ſeems to be a tacit Inſinuation in the Order, which is given below in a Note, that it was founded on the Rapacity of ſome preceding Lieutenant, who, probably for an advanced Price, had granted thoſe Offices for *Life*, and not during his MAJESTY'S *Pleaſure*. If this was not the Caſe, it can only be imputed to the Jealouſy of the King at that critical Period, who had put the *Tower* into the Hands of a Perſon of whoſe Fidelity he was ſecure *.

Very

* "*At the Court of* Whitehall *the* 20*th of July* 1688.

"WHEREAS it was this Day repreſented to his Majeſty that the Places of the "YEOMEN WARDERS of the *Tower* of *London* have been uſually ſold, and "granted *during Life*, the Continuance of which Practice muſt neceſſarily be "prejudicial to his MAJESTY'S Service: His MAJESTY in Council, taking "the ſame into his Royal Conſideration, is pleaſed to order, and it is hereby "ordered,

Very ſoon after K. William was ſecurely ſeated in the Throne, and the intermediate Oppoſition ſince the Abdication of K. James had expended its force, a rigid, though perhaps not an improper, Regulation took place: for ſeveral of the *Yeomen* were diſmiſſed as non-effective; others as being of an under-ſize; and ſtill more of them for neglecting to do their Duty

" ordered, That all the YEOMEN of his *Tower* of *London*, that do now hold " their ſaid Employments by virtue of any Grant, Warrant, Deputation, or " other Inſtrument in Writing for the Term of their reſpective *Lives*, " do forthwith ſurrender and deliver the ſame into the Hands of *Sir Edward* " *Hales*, Bart. the preſent *Lieutenant* of the ſaid *Tower*, to be cancelled, who " is hereby required to give and deliver, *gratis*, unto the ſaid YEOMEN-WAR-" DERS, new Grants, Warrants, or Deputations, for their ſaid Places, to hold " and enjoy the ſame during his MAJESTY's *Pleaſure* *. And it is hereby " further ordered, That for the future no Perſons whatſoever ſhall be admitted " into the Places of YEOMEN-WARDERS of the ſaid *Tower*, to hold or enjoy " the ſame, in any other manner, or for any other Term or Time, than " during his MAJESTY's *Pleaſure* which ſhall be expreſſed in all War-" rants, Grants, and Deputations, conſtituting and appointing them YEO-" MEN-WARDERS. And his MAJESTY is further pleaſed to order, that " henceforward no *Lieutenant* of his *Tower* of *London* do preſume to ſell the " YEOMEN-WARDERS Places, or to demand, exact, or receive, directly or " indirectly, any Gratuity or Reward for or in conſideration of any Grant, " Warrant, or Deputation, for the ſaid Employment, or admit any Perſons " into the ſaid Places but ſuch as ſhall be firſt approved of by his MAJESTY.

" And all Perſons concerned are to take notice hereof, and yield due Obe-" dience hereunto, as they tender his MAJESTY's Service, and will anſwer the " contrary at their Perils."

* Sir Edward Hales, Bart. of Woodchurch, &c. in Kent, had been firmly attached to K. *James*—held ſeveral Poſts under him—and fought for him at the Battle off La Hogue 1692, for which ſervice K. *James* gave him an oſtenſible Patent of Creation into the *Earldom* of *Tenterden*. [See the Baronetage].

in

in perſon, and employing incompetent ſubſtitutes *. This matter was agitated before the King in Council 1689, the Proceedings upon which I give from the Regiſter-Books of the Council-office as briefly as may be.

" To the KING's moſt Excellent MAJESTY and the *Right*
" *Honourable* the Lords of his MAJESTY's *moſt Honour-*
" *able* PRIVY COUNCIL.

" The *humble Petition* of *John Smith*, *Richard Dewell*, *John*
" *Brafield*, and *John Smallwood*, YEOMEN of the GUARD of
" your MAJESTY's Body, on behalf of themſelves and many
" others of the ſame Band,

" Moſt humbly ſheweth,

" That there was inſtituted in the time of your Royal Prede-
" ceſſor KING HENRY *the Seventh* a *Guard* by the name of the
" YEOMEN of the GUARD, to attend his Royal Perſon, which hath
" been continued ever ſince by that name by all your Predeceſſors
" ſucceſſively; and your *Petitioners* (as well as their *Predeceſſors*)
" were admitted to their Places for Life, and none (till now) were
" ever turned out of their ſaid Places at the Will of their CAP-
" TAIN; only, in the *third* Year of K. Charles the Firſt, *Thirty* of
" the YEOMEN of his then GUARD being found unfit for Service
" by reaſon of their Age, and Indiſpoſition of Health, were put
" by their perſonal Attendance, yet nevertheleſs were allowed
" their Wages, without Cheque, during their Lives, as by Privy
" Seal appears.

" That, at the time of your MAJESTY's Acceſſion to the Crown,
" your *Petitioners* were ſome of that GUARD, and were ſo ac-

* A ſimilar Caſe happened in the *Band* of *Gentlemen Penſioners*, at the ſame Period, where the Reaſon for the Diſmiſſion is not attempted to be palliated. [See Curialia, Part II. p. 79.]

" cepted

" cepted to be, and had your MAJESTY's *Liveries*, and attended " your Royal Coronation.

" That notwithſtanding your *Petitioners* are all known and " profeſſed Proteſtants, and were filled with Joy at your Arrival " in England, yet they have been and are diveſted of your " Royal MAJESTY's *Liveries*, and removed from their Places.

" Foraſmuch therefore as your *Petitioners* are not charged with " any Crime, and being faithful adherers to your Royal Service " and Intereſt, and having purchaſed their ſaid Places with the " Expence of their whole Fortunes, depending upon the ſame, as " an Eſtate for life, and it being the only Support for themſelves " and Families, they muſt inevitably periſh through want, un- " leſs remedied herein by your accuſtomed princely Care and " Goodneſs.

" Your *Petitioners* therefore moſt humbly proſtrate themſelves " at your Royal Feet, and pray that, purſuant to your Royal " Declaration, they may either be continued in their ſeveral " Places, or otherwiſe (if found unfit perſonally to ſerve) they " may be allowed their reſpective Wages, as hath been granted in " the time of your Royal Predeceſſors.

" And your Petitioners (as in Duty bound)

" ſhall ever pray, &c.

" Received June 24, 1689.

" Read in Council June 27."

In conſequence of this Petition, the following Minute is found.

" MINUTE

"MINUTE

"from the Regiſter Books of the *Council Office*,

"June 27, 1689.

"PRESENT

"The KING's moſt Excellent MAJESTY.

"UPON reading this day at the Board the humble *Petition* of "*John Smith*, *Richard Dewell*, *John Braſield*, and *John Small-*"*wood*, YEOMEN of the GUARD of his MAJESTY's Body, on "behalf of themſelves and many others of the ſame Band, who "have been lately diveſted of their *Liveries*, and removed from "their Places; praying to be continued in their ſeveral Places, or, "if found unfit perſonally to ſerve, that they may be allowed "their reſpective wages, as hath been granted in the time of His "MAJESTY's Royal Predeceſſors:

"It was Ordered, by His Majeſty in Council, that this Petition "be ſhewed to the Right Honourable the *Earl of Mancheſter*, "CAPTAIN of the YEOMEN of the GUARD of His MAJESTY's "Body, who is deſired to return his anſwer thereunto to His "MAJESTY with all convenient Speed."

In about a month afterwards, a Second Petition was preſented to the KING and *Council*, in order to haſten the Anſwer of the CAPTAIN; in conſequence of which a Day was prefixed for admitting his *Lordſhip*'s Anſwer, which was conceived in the following Terms.

The

" *The Anſwer of* CHARLES EARL OF MANCHESTER, CAPTAIN " *of their* MAJESTIES YEOMEN of the GUARD *of their Bodies,* " *to the Petition of ſeveral late of the ſaid* GUARD, *together with* " *his Reaſons for removing them out of the ſaid* GUARD, *moſt* " *humbly offered to the* KING'S *moſt excellent* MAJESTY *in* " *Council.*

" That upon his MAJESTY's being graciouſly pleaſed to confer " upon me the Honour and Truſt of CAPTAIN of the ſaid YEO- " MEN of the GUARD, he gave it me in command to regulate " the ſame: and upon my Inſpection there-into I found,

" 1ſt, That there were in the ſaid GUARD, or *Band*, ſeveral " *old* and *inſufficient* men paſt ſervice.

" 2dly, Others very unfit for the ſame, being *ſmall* and " *underſized.*

" 3dly, Others that always *lived in the Country*, and *did not* " *do their Duty*, but hired others to do it for them, who hereto- " fore were procured to be ſworn in great numbers, and became a " precedent to the *Yeomen* that were Inhabitants here to do the " ſame: and the only Encouragement to many of theſe Men, to " procure theſe Places, was, to keep them from *Pariſh* and other " *Duties.*

" I found the ſaid GUARD, by theſe means, under great irregu- " larities, and almoſt unſerviceable; upon which, but not without " conſulting the other OFFICERS, I did conſider with them of ſuch " of the ſaid *Band* as were *fit for the Service*, and ſuch as were " not, with due regard to all Objects of Charity, to whom I " gave leave, with my Approbation, to preſent others in their " Places to their beſt Advantages; and theſe made far the greateſt " number in the Alteration.

" Such others, which I removed, were thoſe whoſe Buſineſs " would not admit them to wait in perſon, or that were unfit,

" but had competent Eſtates, Trades, or other good Employ-
" ments, of which the Perſons mentioned in the *Petition* are part,
" *viz. John Smith*, *Richard Dewell*, and *John Braſield*, who
" always lived in the Country, and at Pleaſure, Duty-free; and
" *John Smallwood* (though in Town) was not fit to wait, being
" of a low Stature, but hath a good Competency as aforeſaid.

" I preſume their Claim to a Freehold, or Place for Life, is
" frivolous, and without Reaſon, having no Patents for any ſuch
" Eſtate in that Office, nor any other way of Admittance to ſuch
" their Places, but by Warrant of the CAPTAIN of the ſaid
" YEOMEN of the GUARD to the *Clerk* of the *Cheque*, to ſwear
" and admit them in, who, upon the ſaid Warrant, gives them a
" Certificate only.

" What they alledge, as being accepted of their MAJESTIES
" GUARD at the Coronation, was not ſo by me; nor were they
" ſworn in their MAJESTIES ſervice by any one elſe.

" I humbly conceive it is not only reaſonable, but neceſſary,
" they ſhould be in the Power, and Diſpoſe of their CAPTAIN
" upon all juſt occaſions; for, in caſe they ſhould be allowed
" their Pretenſions, they would have ſo little regard to their
" OFFICERS, that they would not be able to oblige them to their
" Duty.

" And as for the Wages which they pretend have been hereto-
" fore continued to ſuch as have been removed, I preſume it hath
" been more out of *Bounty* from the KING, than any regard to a
" *Right* in them to claim it.

" Thoſe I have put in are all Men of known Integrity: beſides,
" many have been actually ſerviceable to their MAJESTIES, having
" only conſidered their MAJESTIES Service, and the *Honour* of the
" GUARD, without the leaſt Advantage to *Myſelf*, though it for-
" merly hath been done.

" All

" All which I moſt humbly ſubmit to his MAJESTY in Coun-
" cil, and humbly pray to be diſmiſſed from the ſaid *Petition*.

" Read in Council, July 25, 1689."

The Reſult of this Tranſaction does not appear in the Books of the Council-office; whence I conclude, that the Anſwer of the *Earl of Mancheſter* was admitted. The Caſe might rather preſs hard upon ſome of the *Yeomen* who were diſmiſſed; on thoſe, for inſtance, who were not of a ſtandard ſize: but other un-apparent reaſons might poſſibly co-operate at a Criſis ſo full of important political Event.

One Word more, Sir, remains to be ſaid of the WARDERS of the *Tower*. Their Number, when we laſt mentioned them, was ſubſiding to *Twenty-four*: K. William, A. D. 1689, advanced it to *Thirty*, and in 1690 further enlarged it to *Forty*, which has been the Complement ever ſince *.

In the Year 1691, ſeveral of the YEOMEN having been put upon *Pariſh-Offices*, a Petition was preferred to the *Privy Council* praying Relief; and an Order was made in conſequence of it, that the *Attorney General*, on proper Application, ſhould immediately put a ſtop to all ſuch Proceedings. The Order (reciting the Petition) runs as follows, in the Regiſter-Books of the Council Office.

" *At the Court at* Whitehall,

" *July* 16, 1691.

" Upon the *Petition* of ſeveral of their MAJESTIES *Servants*
" *in Ordinary*, concerning their being exempted from *bearing*
" *Offices*, *Watching*, and *Warding*, by the antient Privileges of
" the Houſhold, was the following Reference.

* Regiſter-books of the Council-office.

" It is this Day ordered IN COUNCIL, that this *Petition* of their " MAJESTIES *Servants in Ordinary* be, and it is hereby, referred " to their MAJESTIES *Attorney General*, who is to conſider there- " of, and report to this Board what may be fit to be done " therein.

" *At the Court at* Whitehall,

" *May* 16, 1692.

" PRESENT

" The QUEEN's moſt excellent Majeſty.

" Upon reading the *Petition* of the YEOMEN of the GUARD of " their MAJESTIES Body; ſetting forth, that they were formerly, " by reaſon of their continual Attendance on their MAJESTIES, " both Day and Night, exempted from all *public* and *Pariſh* " *Duties*, of *Watching* or *bearing* any public *Offices*, nor ſub- " jected to any Mulct or Fine for not ſubmitting thereunto; " notwithſtanding which, their ſaid Privileges have been " lately infringed, and *Nathaniel Gannock*, *John Carpenter*, " *William Kendrick*, and others of the ſaid GUARD, are now " indicted in the Crown-office, at the Seſſions, for not *Watch-* " *ing* and *Warding*. And whereas it hath appeared to the " BOARD, that his *Majeſty*, K. CHARLES *the Second*, by Orders " in Council of the 8th of May 1663, and the 22d of Octo- " ber 1675, thought fit to declare his Pleaſure, that his *Ser-* " *vants* ſhould have and enjoy all their ancient *Liberties*, " *Rights*, and *Privileges*; and to order that none of his *Servants* " *in Ordinary with Fee* ſhould be enforced or obliged to bear " any

"any *Public Office*, *ſerve on Juries*, or *Inqueſt*, or *Watch* and "*Ward*, in any place where they dwell or elſewhere, nor ſub-"jected to any Mulct or Fine, for not ſubmitting thereto: "Her MAJESTY, *in Council*, taking the ſame into conſidera-" tion, and holding it reaſonable that the *Petitioners*, *and all* "*other their* MAJESTIES *Servants in Ordinary with Fee*, ſhould " enjoy their ancient Privileges; and, in reſpect of their conti-"nual attendance on their MAJESTIES, both Day and Night, "ſhould be exempted from the Duty of *Watching*, and from " *bearing publick Offices*, or be ſubject to any Mulct or Fine for " the ſame, *did*, this day order, that their MAJESTIES *At-*"*torney General*, for the time being, be, and he is hereby, au-"thorized and required, upon any application made to him by " the *Petitioners*, or any of their MAJESTIES *Servants in Ordi-*"*nary with Fee*, to cauſe a ſtop to be put to all Proceedings "already had, or to be commenced, againſt them, or any of "them, for refuſing to *watch*, *bear*, or *undergo*, any *publick* "*Office* or Employment above mentioned."

Notwithſtanding the above *peremptory* ORDER, and another by Q. ANNE in the Year 1703 repeated by K. GEORGE I. 1714, as likewiſe by K. George II. 1728, the *Yeomen* have more than once been harraſſed with theſe vexatious matters. This, however, may be in ſome meaſure attributed to their Ignorance of ſuch Privileges, or in their not properly pleading the *Order* of *Council*, which has iſſued on the commencement of every Reign ſince the Revolution, and been made public in the Gazette *.

By the way, I take the Liberty to remark, that this is ſcarcely a ſufficient Promulgation of Immunities of ſuch ſort. Every Man

* The *Proclamation*, on the Acceſſion of his *preſent* MAJESTY, is reprinted from the *Gazette* at the end of Part I. of this Work.

entitled

entitled to them ſhould have an *authenticated* Copy of the *Order* individually, that he may be enabled to exhibit it, when occaſion may require, at his Place of Reſidence, and not be obliged to revert to an old Gazette, little known, and hardly to be found *.

I now

* A Caſe happened at Canterbury, in the Month of December 1760, which will ſhew a neceſſity that every YEOMAN ſhould have an Authority at hand to produce for ſuch Claims of Exemption. It was briefly thus:

A YEOMAN of the GUARD reſided in that City, and kept an Ale-houſe there for ſeveral Years, where, by the Cuſtom, every Houſholder is obliged to *watch* in Rotation, or to procure a Subſtitute. The *Yeoman* in queſtion was ſerved with the uſual Notice by the Conſtable, to perform this Duty, when his Turn arrived; to which he paid no regard, imagining probably that the Conſtable could not be ignorant that the Place of a *Yeoman* exonerated him from ſuch Offices. It was then upwards of 30 Years ſince the *Order of Council* for that purpoſe had iſſued on the Acceſſion of K. GEORGE II. and the like Order of his preſent Majeſty did not appear till the January following, in the year 1761; but the *late* KING's Order was underſtood to be valid, till ſuperſeded by that of his Succeſſor. Had the *Yeoman* remonſtrated properly in the firſt Stage of the Buſineſs, the Proceſs would have ended there: but, in conſequence of his Contempt, he was firſt indicted at the Seſſion of the Peace for the City, and, neglecting to appear to the Indictment, was at laſt arreſted by the Authority of the Sheriff. It was now time for him to plead his Exemption, by virtue of his Poſt, as forcibly as poſſible, which he did by Repreſentation to the *Clerk of the Cheque*; and the Caſe came before the *Lord Chamberlain*, who ordered his Secretary to ſtate, by Letter to the Sheriff of Canterbury, the Privileges annexed to the Office of a *Yeoman of the Guard*, and to refer him to the *Order* then in force.

To ſhew how little ſuch general Promulgations, through the Channel of the Gazette, or other partial Diſperſions (ſtrongly pointed even as theſe are), meet with due Attention, it appears that the above Letter was laid before the Recorder, who, in his Anſwer, ſays, "Every body here were entire Strangers to his "late MAJESTY's *Order in Council*;—had it been known, due Obedience would "have been given to it †." The Reſult of this Affair was, that, according to

† The Anſwer at large may be ſeen in the Minute-Books of the Corps.

an

I now return Sir, to the Period at which I broke off from the general Subject, and, on entering on the Reign of Queen Anne, have the pleaſure of recording a very laudable Cuſtom which was adopted by the Corps in the Year 1704, and which is worthy of being embraced by other large Bodies of Men in a ſimilar Predicament. Many a *Yeoman* of the *Guard*, I make no doubt, for the honour of wearing the KING's *Coat*, may have been tempted to venture his whole little Fortune in the Purchaſe of the Office, to the detriment of his Family, while, by an immature Death, a Wife or Children may have become deſtitute. To remedy ſuch Inconveniences, as far as may be, the YEOMEN entered into a Compact, in the Year above-mentioned, that, on the Death of any of their Brethren in Office, the Survivors (including the Succeſſor) ſhould each pay *Ten Shillings* for the Uſe and Benefit of the *Widow*, *Children*, or *Repreſentatives* of ſuch deceaſed *Yeoman*. The Agreement, which is engroſſed on Parchment, approved and ſigned by the then CAPTAIN, ſhall (verbatim) ſpeak for itſelf.

" YEOMEN of the GUARDS Reſolutions, *Auguſt* 1704.

" WHEREAS *it has manifeſtly Appeared, by too many ſad In-*
" *ſtances, That upon the Death of divers* YEOMEN *of the* GUARD, *the*
" Widdowes, Children, *or both, have thereby been rendered deſti-*
" *tute of all manner of meanes whereby to ſubſiſt, and became the*
" *greateſt objects of Charity; to remedy this, by preventing the*

an Authority given by the *Order*, the Attorney General officially put a period to the Proceſs.

I have inſiſted thus much upon the Caſe in ſupport of my Obſervation; for, had the Party been able to have exhibited a Copy of ſuch *Order* in the firſt Inſtance, when the Notice was ſerved upon him, Matters had not run to ſo unpleaſant an Extremity.

" *like*

" *like deplorable accidents for the future, and that the poor Children*
" *(ſo left) may have a Chriſtian Education, in the Knowledge and*
" *Practice of Religion, as profeſſed and taught in the Church of*
" *England, ſo abſolutely neceſſary to their Piety, Virtue, and*
" *honeſt Livelyhood:*

" WEE *the* YEOMEN of the GUARD, *of her* MAJESTIES *Body,*
" *whoſe names are underwritten, taking the ſame into ſerious conſi-*
" *deration, Do voluntarily Reſolve, and hereby oblige and engage*
" *Ourſelves, and every of us, To* pay *or* cauſe to be paid, *after the*
" *Death of every* YEOMAN of the GUARD, *the* ſume *of* Ten
" Shillings *each Man, out of the firſt Sallary next Payable after any*
" *ſuch* Yeoman's *death, To the* Widdow, *or* Children, *or to theire*
" *uſe*; Or, *When no* Widow *or* Children *are, then to the* Heire,
" Executor, Adminiſtrator, *or* Aſſigne, *of the* Deceaſed, *which*
" ſume *of* Ten Shillings *each Man is hereby agreed to be depoſited*
" *and left in the hands of the* Deputy-Paymaſter, *or others, of*
" *the* Treaſury-Chamber, *appointed or deputed to pay ſuch Salary*
" *as aforeſaid; which ſaid officer or officers wee do hereby deſire*
" *to ſtopp and receive the ſame from each and every of us, from*
" *time to time, any Aſſignmentt or otherwiſe, upon the ſaid office,*
" *notwithſtanding, and by them paid to the* Widdow, *&c. on De-*
" *mand, in the preſence of three at leaſt of the ſaid* Guard. *And*
" *to the end it may more fully anſwere the intention of this De-*
" *ſigne; it is reſolved, and* WEE *Doe hereby oblige ourſelves to diſ-*
" *charge the ſaid Pay-Office of all Fees whatſoever relateing to the*
" *ſaid money. And where the* Succeſſor *of any ſuch* YEOMAN of
" the GUARD *ſhall receive any Salary at ſuch time as the reſt of*
" *the ſaid Guard payes their Quota of* Ten Shillings, *that ſuch*
" Succeſſor *doe pay at the ſame time for his part* Ten Shillings *to*
" *the Purpoſes above mentioned. That all Doubts, Queſtions, Diſ-*
" *putes, on Controverſies, that ſhall, or may, happen to arriſe at*

" *any time or times hereafter in Executing this Charitable Deſigne,*
" *be examined and determined by at leaſt* Twelve *of the ſaid* Guard;
" *as alſo to Inſpect into the management of the Money, when left to*
" Orphanes *or Otherwiſe, as occaſion may require, to perfect theſe*
" *Reſolutions, which Twelve Men are to be choſen by the Six Waits*
" *then out of Waiting.*

" *December* 15*th*, 1704.
" *I approve this*
" *good Deſign.* HARTINTON*.

" *Int. xiii die Xbris.*
" 1705, *in Officio*
" *Theſaur' Camer'.*
" DN̄Æ RN̄Æ,
" *per* J. HOLBECH.

The above Purpoſe has been invariably adhered to ever ſince its Commencement (an Interval of more than Four-Score Years), although ſome Doubts once aroſe with reſpect to the Appropriation of the Contribution, which were referred to, and governed by, the Opinion of the then *Attorney General* †. The Deciſion there made brings the Queſtion, where there is neither *Widow* nor *Children*, within the Statute of Diſtribution. The Caſe alluded to I have preſerved in a Note, together with *Mr. Attorney's* Opinion, as being of ſome Importance

* William *Marquis* of *Hartington*, and afterwards the *Second Duke of Devonſhire.*

† *William de Grey, Eſq.*—afterwards *Sir William De Grey, Knt.* Chief Juſtice of the Common Pleas, and at length created *Lord Walſingham.*

ſhould any Difficulty ariſe hereafter, and the Inſtrument by accident be loſt or deſtroyed *.

In

*CASE.

"One of the *Yeomen* late of his MAJESTY's *Guards* departed this life Fe-
"bruary laſt a *Batchelor*, and *Inteſtate*—Upon whoſe Death a cuſtomary Bene-
"faction of *Ten Shillings* per *Yeoman* (they being 100 in Number), making the
"ſum of 50l. is paid or given to the proper *Repreſentative* of the *Inteſtate*.
"Therefore upon the whole, as the *Deceaſed* had many Relations, there are
"doubts ariſing amongſt them who ſhall be intitled to receive the ſame.

"Q. Is the Benefaction, or Gift, of 50l. ſo given as abovementioned, a
"*perſonal Chattel*, a *Realty*, or *Hereditary matter*?—If a *perſonal Eſtate*, how is
"the ſame to operate? is it to go to the next Kin to the Deceaſed *Yeoman*,
"in a Courſe of Adminiſtration (ſame being a *perſonalty*), or how otherwiſe?—
"Pleaſe to give Your Opinion on this Caſe, which will be deciſive and
"ſatisfactory in the premiſes to all parties, and prevent any diſputes that
"now or hereafter may ariſe among the *Yeomen*.

"A. From theſe Circumſtances, I think the Benefaction is to be conſidered
"as *perſonal Eſtate*, and be paid to the *next of Kin* by the Statute of Diſtribu-
"tion, as if the Inteſtate had died poſſeſſed of it.

"Wm. de Grey.
"Octr. 5th, 1766."

This Caſe came again before the Attorney General, with the following addition in the Statement of it; *viz.* "That the *Youngeſt Brother*, and a *Siſter*
"of the Deceaſed *Yeoman*, had Adminiſtered and laid Claim to the *Fifty*
"*Pounds* and the reſt of his Effects; excluding the *Grand-Children* of
"the *Eldeſt Brother* deceaſed, from all right to the *Fifty Pounds*, or other-
"wiſe.

"Under theſe Circumſtances, the Caſe we humbly ſubmitt to your
"Honour's advice and opinion is, who are the Proper Heirs to receive the
"*fifty pounds*, &c.?

"St. James's Palace,
"27th Sept. 1766."

A. "I

In my Account, Sir, of the BAND of *Gentlemen Penſioners*, which conſtitutes the Second Part of this Publication *, I reſerved what little I have to offer, regarding the BATTLE-AXE GUARDS in *Ireland*, as more properly appertaining to this Memoir, they being a Body of YEOMEN like our own, with ſome Peculiarities; although this Inſtitution is too modern to involve any Hiſtory, being no older than the Year 1704, the Period now before us. According to the Military Eſtabliſhment of *Ireland* of that Date it conſiſts of

" *One Company* of *Foot-Guards* to be armed with BATTLE-
" AXES, and to attend the State, comprizing

" *A* CAPTAIN.
" *Two* LIEUTENANTS.
" *Two* SERJEANTS †.
" *Fifty* YEOMEN ‡.

The Cloathing of theſe YEOMEN is renewed every Two Years by Virtue of the KING's Letter.

A. " I do not obſerve that the *Yeomen* of the *Guard* have reſerved to themſelves " any Power of diſtributing this Money amongſt the Relations of the Deceaſed; " but they have declared that, if there is a *Widow* and *Children*, they ſhall have " it; if there are none, the *Heirs* or *Executors* are to have it; by which is " meant that ſuch Relations ſhall have it as would have the reſt of his perſonal " Eſtate. Now a *Brother* and *Siſter*, as in this Caſe, will take it in Excluſion " of the *Grand-children* of *another Brother*.

" Wm. de Grey.
" Oct. 30th, 1766."

* P. 103.

† Theſe ſhould ſeem to be correſpondent to our *Yeomen-Uſhers*.

‡ Extracted from the Auditor's Office in Dublin.

The CAPTAIN bears a *Baton* with a *Gold-Head*, while the LIEUTENANTS have one with a *Silver Head* like the *Officers* of the *Yeomen* of the *Guard*.

The *Dreſs* and *Appendages* of both the *Officers* and *Men*, I am informed, are nearly the ſame as thoſe of our *Yeomen*; and all the Places in the Corps are diſpoſed of in a ſimilar Manner, the Appointment of the *Serjeants* and *Private Men* being in the Breaſt of the CAPTAIN.

Thus much, Sir, for the collateral *Corps* in *Ireland*. We will now revert to our own. Since the Revolution, no change, except what I have related, has taken place worthy of attention *. There are at this Day *One Hundred* YEOMEN *in Ordinary*, including *Eight* USHERS, commanded by the OFFICERS above-mentioned, and *Forty* WARDERS *of the* TOWER. Theſe laſt are ſworn to be obedient not only to the CAPTAIN and

* To ſhew, however, that this Corps was held in a reſpectable light at the commencement of the preſent Century, I find that the Poſt of a YEOMAN was not deemed below the acceptance of a *Citizen of London* in the Reign of Q. Anne. In St. George's Chapel at Windſor was buried (near the North Door) George Brooke, who died Oct. 24, 1593; and who, as his Monumental Inſcription informs us, was a "YEOMAN *of the* GUARD unto K. Henry VIII.—K. Edward VI.—Q. Mary—and Q. Elizabeth." This is all we learn of him; and his Epitaph contains nothing more than a common Bill of Mortality: but below is added as follows;

"Out of a Reſpect to the Memory of the *deceaſed*, and alſo to the *Honour* and "*Antiquity* of the ſaid GUARD, this Plate was repaired, enlarged, and engraven, "at the ſole Charge of Edward Phillips, *Citizen* and *Merchant-Taylor* of "London, and One of the 100 YEOMEN *of the* GUARD to K. William III. "and Q. Mary II. of bleſſed Memory, and now to her Majeſty Queen Anne, "in the 6th Year of her Reign, and the 52d Year of his Age, 1707."

[Aſhmole's Berkſhire, Vol. III. p. 198, 199, Oct.]

OFFICERS of the main Body, but likewiſe to the GOVERNOUR and other *Officers* of the TOWER. The Appointment of them is in the *Chief Officer of the* TOWER for the time being; and they are bound by their Oath "not to depart from the *Tower* "of *London* above 20 Miles, without Leave from the GOVER- "NOUR or LIEUTENANT GOVERNOUR of the ſaid TOWER *of* "*London.*" The YEOMEN *in Ordinary* are ſworn to the like Obligation, without the Permiſſion of their CAPTAIN *. It is to be obſerved here, that the WARDERS are under a double Subordination, *viz.* to the CAPTAIN of the *Yeomen*, and to the *Chief Officer* of the *Tower*; not but that the YEOMEN *in Ordinary*, including their *Officers* (the Captain excepted), are amenable to the Commands both of the LORD *Chamberlain* and the VICE *Chamberlain* in the KING's Service, by Virtue of their Oath †.

The YEOMEN on Duty have a ſubſtantial Dinner provided every Day with other proper Allowances. Smoking Tobacco in their Dining Room was, however, ſtrictly prohibited, by an Order from the LORD *Chamberlain*, A. D. 1737; and by a ſubſequent Injunction from the CAPTAIN, A. D. 1747, the *Yeomen* on Duty were farther reſtrained from frequenting any Place where ſmoking is practiſed. Two Reaſons might co-operate in theſe Orders, *viz.* the Fear of Fire in the former; and in both the Smell of Tobacco, which is in general offenſive, and ſo retainable in the Cloaths, even of thoſe who merely are preſent where ſmoking is much uſed ‡.

* This Leave of Abſence anciently made a part of the Oath of other Branches of the Royal Eſtabliſhment. [See Curialia, Part. II. p. 11.]

† The Oath of the CAPTAIN ſubjects him to the Commands of the LORD *Chamberlain* only.

‡ Minute-books of the Corps.

Though

Though I have repreſented this *Corps* to you, Sir, in the groſs, as conſiſting of the *Commiſſioned* OFFICERS above-mentioned, the *Warrant* OFFICERS called *Yeomen-Uſhers*, the YEOMEN *in Ordinary*, together with the WARDERS of the *Tower* or YEOMEN *Extraordinary*; yet this is not the whole Sir, that remains to be ſaid. There are likewiſe Two Branches of the effective *Yeomen*, which will claim a little Explanation; for *Six* of them are called *Yeomen*-HANGERS, and *Two* others are ſtyled *Yeomen*-BED-GOERS *. Notwithſtanding theſe ſeemingly unintelligible Terms, the Parties appear to have been remanents of the ancient Office of *Yeomen* of the *Crown*.

I conceive that both theſe Officers are named from their Functions, and that the Buſineſs of a *Yeoman*-HANGER was to place and diſplace the Tapeſtry in the Royal Apartments when the KING removed from one Palace to another, till Luxury and a Love of Expence introduced different Furniture for each Palace, after which the Duty of the *Yeomen*-HANGERS in a great Meaſure vaniſhed: for we are told, by the learned Editor of the Northumberland Houſhold-Book which relates to the times of K. Henry VII. and VIII. that "the uſual "manner of hanging the Rooms in the old Caſtles was only to "cover the naked Stone Walls with *Tapeſtry* or *Arras* fixed "upon Tenter-hooks, from which they were eaſily taken down "upon every Removal †." The like may be ſaid of the *Yeomen* BED-

* The Salary of each of them is equal to that of the *Yeomen-Uſhers*, viz. *Ten Pounds* per ann. more than the Pay of the Yeomen in Ordinary.

† Preface, p. xv. Thus when the Queen Dowager of Scotland viſited K. Edward VI. 1550, the Apartments at Hampton-Court were furniſhed for her

BED-GOERS, who on ſuch Removals, or in Progreſſes, had the Charge of the *Beds* on the Road, and the Care of putting

her Accommodation, which, the King tells us, were "all *hanged with Arras*, "and ſo was the Hall: and all the other Lodgings of Mine in the Houſe were "finely dreſſed." [Journal, p. 38.] When Q. Elizabeth viſited Cambridge A. D. 1564 a ſpacious Room was formed for her Majeſty at the End of St. Mary's Church on the Sunday during her Stay—"which was *by her own Ser-* "*vants* richly *hanged with Arras.*" [Peck's Deſid. Cur. Lib. VII.] This Practice is ſtill exemplified in the Hall of Eton College, where every Year, at *Election*, the Wall at the Upper End of the Hall is *hanged with Tapeſtry*, which remains there till the End of the Receſs, when it is taken down, and preſerved till that Seaſon returns in the ſucceeding Year. The Space between the Tapeſtry and the Wall will explain that Paſſage in Hamlet where Polonius is found concealed behind the Arras. [See the notes on Shakſpeare's Henry IV. Part I. Act. 2. Se. 4. in the Edition by Dr. Johnſon and Mr. Steevens, for other inſtances.] In fact it was the *only* mode of hanging Rooms anciently: thus in Italy in the 16th Century, Antonio de Leyva was *really* placed behind the Tapeſtry to be an Ear-Witneſs to a Converſation. [Dr. Robertſon's Hiſt. of Ch. V. Vol. II. p. 348. Octavo.] The following Paſſage in the Letters of Baron Bielfeld is not unworthy of Inſertion here as a Trait of ancient Cuſtoms, and which ſurvived on the Continent to the middle of the preſent Century, and may not perhaps be quite extinguiſhed, as the Spaniards are great Manneriſts, and peculiarly averſe to Innovation. Speaking of the Election and Coronation of the Emperor 1741, and of the mode of Travelling uſed by the Marquis of Montigo Ambaſſador from the Court of Spain on that Occaſion, the Baron tells us, that the Ambaſſador was preceded by two Baggage-Waggons which carried with them every thing neceſſary for his Reception wherever he ſhould ſtop; and that, when the Waggons arrived, even at a poor mean Village, the Domeſticks who accompanied them immediatly cleared and cleaned ſome Chamber, fixed the *Tapeſtry* by Rings to the Walls, covered the Floor with Carpets, furniſhed the Room with Velvet Chairs and other Appendages, and ſupplied the Kitchen and Cellar with proper Neceſſaries. [Letters, Vol. I. Let. 1. Edit. 1768].——Thus Monarchs, and their Repreſentatives, were always at home.

them up, and taking them down. Theſe therefore had the Name from their *going* with the *Beds* from place to place; as thoſe who had the Care of the KING's *Robes* on ſuch occaſions were called *Robe-Goers*; which appears from an Entry I have ſeen in the Lord Chamberlain's Office *. This Deſcription of the Duty of theſe Officers has a bold Retroſpect to the *Yeomen* of the *Crown*, who, as we have ſeen in the Time of K. Edward IV. were appointed variouſly—One to be *Yeoman* of the Wardrobe of *Beds*—Two to be *Yeomen* of the *Chamber* (who ſeem ſince to have obtained the Name of *Yeomen-Hangers*)—and another to be *Yeoman* of the *Robes*, of whom the firſt and laſt, when they moved with the KING, have been called *Robe-Goers*, and *Bed-Goers*.

Another ſimilar Branch of Duty to be performed by theſe Officers, the *Hangers* and *Bed-Goers*, was the preparing the KING's *Tent* when occaſion required, jointly aſſiſting each other in pitching and hanging the *Tent*, and putting up the *Bed*. The principal charge of the *Tent*, and its Furniture, was anciently in a peculiar Department; for there were Officers appropriated to the *Tents*, viz: (as I find them Temp. Edward VI.) a *Maſter*, *Yeomen*, and *Grooms* of the *Tents* †.

When

* It is a Warrant ſigned by the Lord Chamberlain, and directed to the Treaſurer of the Chamber, to pay "Riding Charges to a *Yeoman-Hanger*, a *Yeoman-Robe-Goer*, and a Yeoman-*Bed-Goer*, Three Shillings per diem each, in "attending his Majeſty into Holland and Flanders." Dated March 11, 167½.

† The Office of *Maſter* of the *Tents* was formerly a Poſt of high Honour, and has not very long been aboliſhed; for in the Proceſſion of K. James I. from the Tower to Weſtminſter to his Coronation (A. D. 1603), this Officer walked as one of, what were then called, the *Maſters* of the *Standing Offices*, comprehending

1. The

When K. Geo. II. went to Hanover, to take the Command of the Army in the Year 1743, the *Six* Yeomen *Hangers* and *Two* Yeomen *Bed-Goers* were called to this Duty, and had the Care of all the Royal Baggage, and particularly of the King's Camp-Equipage and Bed. The Tent was not actually pitched; but I am told, that the *Hangers* and *Bed-Goers* were prepared to have erected the Pavilion, to have hanged it properly, and placed the Bed *. They, however, ſo far performed their Duty as to put up the KING's *Bed* every night on the Road; and at all times, when the KING halted, took their Poſts as *Yeomen in Ordinary*, for which laſt purpoſe they carried with them their *Partizans*, though, in their other Capacities, they were armed with *Carbines*, the ancient *Harquebus* †.

A *Yeoman Uſher*, and a Party of *Yeomen*, now compoſe the Guard that attends in the *Great Chamber*, on Levée-Days and Drawing-Room Days, whoſe Office it is to keep the Paſſage clear, that the Nobility, &c. who frequent the Court, may paſs without moleſtation. The *Uſher* is poſted at the Head of

1. The Maſter of the Ordnance.
2. The Maſter of the Wardrobe.
3. The Maſter of the Armory.
4. The Maſter of the Revells.
5. The *Maſter* of the *Tents*. [MSS. W. Y. in Coll. Arm.].

* My Informant was *John Broughton*, one of the *Yeomen Hangers* who went on this ſervice.

† Theſe *Carbines* are now lodged in the Tower.

N. B. No Officer of the Corps attended on the Occaſion, but theſe Men were put under the Command of the Officer of the Horſe-Guards, called the *Gold Stick*. [Broughton.]

the Room, cloſe by the Door leading into the *Preſence-Chamber*, to whom, when Perſons of a certain Diſtinction enter from the Stairs, the lowermoſt *Yeoman*, next to the Entrance of the Chamber, calls aloud—"*Yeoman Uſher!*—to apprize him of ſuch approach. To this the *Uſher* makes Anſwer, by audibly crying—"Stand by;"—to warn all indifferent Perſons to evacuate the Paſs. Theſe are called *The Honours of the Guard-Chamber*, which are conferred on *Peers* and *Peereſſes* of the Three Kingdoms:—on *Privy Counſellors*;—on *Knights* of the *Orders*;—and on *Ambaſſadors* and *Chargés des Affaires*; on the *Great Officers* of State—and on the *Captain* (even though he ſhould be a Commoner)—and the *Lieutenant* *.

The Spaniſh Court ſeems to have adopted a ſimilar Mode of Reſpect paid to Perſons of a certain Rank on ſuch Occaſions, though the correſponding Body of Men in the Spaniſh Houſhold is comparatively of a modern Date; for the Royal Guards, there called *Alabarderos* (ſo denominated from their carrying an *Alabarda* or *Halbert*), were not eſtabliſhed till the Year 1707, by K. Philip V. Their Uniform is Blue and Red, and they do Duty in the Ante-Rooms belonging to all the Apartments of the Royal Family, and *ſtrike their Halberts on the Ground*, when an *Ambaſſador*, a *Grandee*, or an *Officer* of *high Rank* paſſes by them †.

It

* The Term "*Stand by*" was uſed on other Occaſions in the Language of large Houſholds; for we are told, that, even in the Houſes of Noblemen, when the Uſher [of the Hall] gave Orders for covering the Table, he went before and cried—"By your leave, Gentlemen; *Stand by.*" [Orders for Ld. Fairfax's Houſhold, made after the Civil Wars, and printed in the Antiquarian Repertory, Vol. III. p. 153.].

† Dictionary publiſhed by the Royal Academy at Madrid, 1726—39. Capt. Stevens, who printed his Dictionary 1726, thought them ſo ſimilar to our

It is obſervable, with regard to the *Yeoman-Uſher* on this Duty, that he does not carry a *Partiſan* in common with the reſt of the Yeomen, but an under-hand *Staff*, which, till very lately, was a cane, and often a common walking-ſtick. This, however uncourtly it might ſeem, had a meaning, and, as I conceive, was intended to operate as a *Rod*, the ancient official Badge of an *Uſher*: for *Uſhers* of every Denomination formerly bore *Rods* as their Inſignia, and the Expreſſions of *Gentleman-Uſher* of the *Black-Rod*, &c. fundamentally imply differential Terms. Notwithſtanding that the uſe of *Rods* in the Royal Houſhold was in general diſcontinued after the Reſtoration; yet it appears, from a MS. in the Poſſeſſion of Thomas Aſtle, Eſq; relating to the early part of the Reign of Charles II. that the *Yeomen-Uſhers* then "wore in their Breaſts a *little ſtaff*, as a Token "of the Power which they held [as *Uſhers*] under the LORD "CHAMBERLAIN." The Cane or Stick above-mentioned, was therefore evidently a Repreſentative, firſt of the *Rod*, and at length of the *little ſtaff*, borne by the *Yeomen-Uſhers* of the *Great-Chamber*, which, as we have ſeen, had a civil Eſtabliſhment ſimilar to thoſe of the reſt of the State-Apartments. Theſe uncouth Subſtitutes for *Rods* are now converted into

Yeomen, that he tranſlates *Alabardero*, "an *Halberdier*—or *Yeoman of the* "*Guard.*" They are commanded by a *Captain*, a *Lieutenant*, and a *Sub-Lieutenant*, as appears from the Spaniſh *Kalendario Manual*, an annual Publication like our Court-Calendar. Baron Bielfeld, who was in England 1741, ſays, that our *Yeomen* uſed at that time to ſtrike their Halberts upon the Floor, at the Approach of Perſons of the above Deſcription, before they gave the *Stand-by*; ſo that the Spaniſh Inſtitution ſeems to have been a very cloſe Copy of our own. [Vol. III. Letter 26.]. The Spaniſh *Alabarderos* alſo accompany the Royal Dinner from the Kitchen to the Apartments and back again.

uniform *Batons* of an humble Sort, conſonant, in ſome degree, to thoſe carried by the ſuperior Officers of the Corps *.

The ſingular Habit of a *Yeoman* is too well known, Sir, to require any Deſcription; but ſome circumſtances relating to it will admit of Inveſtigation. It is generally thought to have been the Dreſs of the King and the Court in the Reigns of K. Henry VII. and K. Henry VIII. or of the Middle of the 16th Century †; but this ſeems to be very diſputable, for on Examination, the Coats of the Yeomen will be found to be eſſentially different, and indeed of a much later Date. It is only neceſſary to refer to the Print of "The Proceſſion of K. Ed. VI. "from the Tower to Weſtminſter," lately engraved by the Society of Antiquaries, wherein the Habit of a Yeoman, appears to have conſiſted of a *Tunick*, girded about the waiſt by the Sword-Belt, with Skirts juſt long enough to cover the *Trunk-Breeches*, and with gathered Sleeves reaching barely half-way from the Shoulder to the Elbow. The Stockings of courſe extended upwards above the middle of the thigh. Such was the common mode of Dreſs of that time, to which the Nobility and Gentry of a certain Rank ſuperadded a *Cloak*, which was denied to every lower Order in the Court. Now, Sir, the Coats of our preſent Yeomen reach below the Knee, and have a ſwoll'n kind of Pudding-Sleeve which deſcends to the Wriſt.

* They were introduced by the the preſent Captain the Earl of Aylesford A. D. 1785.

† See Granger's Biog. Hiſt. 2d Edit I. 119. Oct. where he obſerves, that "The Dreſs of the King and the Nobles, in the Beginning of this Reign "[Hen. VIII.], was not unlike that worn by the *Yeomen* of the *Guard* at "preſent."

The

The Cap, therefore, ſeems to be the only pure Remnant of the original Dreſs.

To trace the Uniform as far back as poſſible, I am enabled to obſerve to you, Sir, that the *Yeomen* do not appear to have had any peculiar Dreſs till the *Eighteenth* Year of K. Henry VIII. [A. D. 1527.], although it was in Contemplation, and an Order for it was ſigned by the King, Ten Years before it actually took place. The Number of *Yeomen*, at the Period laſt-mentioned [A. D. 1527.], was very great, and the Expence attending ſuch an Idea might, on better Advice, retard the King's Wiſhes: but we may recollect that the *Guard* was reduced very conſiderably by the Statutes of Eltham, which were iſſued in the Year 1526, whereby, among other œconomicks, the King was enabled by the Reduction of the Number of the *Yeomen*, to add to the Splendour of what remained. In the Year 1527 therefore, the Order inſerted below in a Note, ſeems to have taken Effect, which gave to the *Yeomen of the Guard* (together with ſome others) a *Livery* of *Red* Cloth, which, we may infer from the Tenor of the Order, they had never worn before that time; their only diſtinguiſhing Badges of Office ſeeming theretofore to have been the *Halberds*, then peculiar to themſelves within the King's Palace *.

The

* "HENRY the VIII. by the Grace of GOD, King of England, and of "France, Defender of the Faith, and Lord of Ireland; to Our truſty and "well-beloved Servant, Nicholas Hurleton and Edmund Perkin, Clerks of "Our Green-Cloth, and Edward Weldon, or Our Clerk Comptroller that "hereafter may be, greeting.

"Whereas We, by Our Letters ſigned with Our hand, bearing Date, at "Our Manor of Greenwich, the firſt Day of May, in the viiith Year of Our "Reign,

The Number of the Guard, ſpecified to be cloathed in the above uniform manner, is *Sixty*; but whether that included the whole Eſtabliſhment of the Corps, or a ſelect Part of it, is uncertain;

" Reign, for divers Conſiderations Us moving, have determined to give *Livery* " *Coats*, as well to the *Yeomen* of Our *Garde*, as unto all other *Yeomen*, *Grooms*, " *Pages*, and *Children* of Our *Chamber*, *Houſhold*, *Chapel*, and *Stable*, have com- " manded Our truſtie and well-beloved Servant John Surley, Eſq; Cofferer of " Our Houſhold, to deliver unto Our truſty Servant Lawrence Eglesfield, " *Yeoman Uſher* of Our Chamber, for the buying of c.c.xiii Yardes and an " Half of Broad Cloth, of Colour *Red*, for Coats for LX *Yeomen of Our Garde* " at vs iiiid. the Yard, the Sum of lvil. xviiis. and viiid. and for xxxii Yards " and a Half of Broad Cloth of the ſaid Colour for Coats, for divers other " *Yeomen* of Our ſaid *Chamber* and *Wardrobes*, at iiiis. and viiid. the Yard, " the Sum of viil. xis. viiid.; and for $\frac{xx}{iiii}$ and xi Yards of Broad Cloth " of the ſaid Colour for Coats, for xxviii *Grooms* and *Pages* of Our ſaid " *Chamber* and *Warderobe*, at iiiis. the Yard, the Sum of xviii l. iiiis. to be paid " unto our ſaid Servant Lawrence Eglesfield the Sum of $\frac{xx}{iih}$ iil. xiiiis. iiid.

" And furthermore, We have commanded Our truſty Servant John Surley, " to deliver unto Our well-beloved Servant Edward Weldon, for the buying of " c.c.$\frac{xx}{iiii}$ and xiiii Yards of Broad Cloth, of the ſaid Colour, for Coats for $\frac{xx}{iiii}$ " vii *Yeomen* of our *Houſhold*, and *Chapel*, and *Stable*, at iiiis. viiid. the Yard, " the Sum of xxxxviiil. xiiis. iid.; and for vi. c. $\frac{xx}{iiii}$ Yards and an half of Broad " Cloth of the ſaid Colour, for Coats for c.c.iiii *Grooms*, *Pages*, and *Children*, " of Our ſaid *Houſhold*, *Chapel*, and *Stable*, at iiiis. the Yard, the Sum of " c.xxxvil. xviiis.—and alſo for the Embroidering of c.c.$\frac{xx}{iiii}$. xi. Coats of Our " ſaid Servants of *Houſhold*, *Chapel*, and *Stable*, every Coat rated at iis. the Sum " of xxixl. iis.

" And furthermore, for the Embroidering of xxxviii Coats for certain other " *Yeomen*, *Grooms*, and *Pages* of our *Chamber* and *Wardrobes*, every Coat rated at iis. " the Sum of c.lxxvis. in the whole, to be paid to our Servant Edward Weldon " the Sum of c.c.xxxviil. xiis. viiid. Wherefore We will and command you, " and every of you, that ye, in the account of Our ſaid Cofferer to be holden " before you of the Expences of Our ſaid Houſhold from the laſt Day of Sep- " tember, in the viith Year of Our Reign, unto the laſt of September then " next

certain; for in the Article of "The Reformation of the Guard," above-given at large from the Eltham-Statutes, a blank Space is left for the Number in every Copy of them which I have ſeen *. The *Coats* of the *Yeomen* are *uniform* in the ſtained Drawing of K. Edward's Proceſſion; but the *Dreſs* is not altogether ſo; for the Hoſe are as evidently of various colours, which, from the Expoſure of the Limbs by the Trunk-Breeches, takes off from the Dignity of their Appearance. *Red Coats* only are ſpecified in the Order for Cloathing.—*Caps* were the ordinary covering of the Time, and the colour of the reſt of the Dreſs ſeems to have been left at pleaſure. At this period the Arms peculiar to the Yeomen were *Axes*, then called *Bills* or *Halberts*, as we may obſerve in the above Print of the Proceſſion of K. Edward; and Sir Thomas More calls them *Bill-men* †: and I rather imagine that the preſent *Partiſan* did not ſucceed to the *Bill* till the Reſtoration, introduced by K. Charles II. after the Faſhion of the French *Gardes de la Manche* at that Period ‡.

Embroidery

"next following, Do make unto him due and plain allowances, as well of "the ſaid Sums of $\frac{xx}{iiii}$iil. xiiiis. iiiid. paid unto the hands of Our ſaid Servant "Edward Weldon, for the Cauſe before written, accordingly.

"And theſe Our Letters, ſigned with Our Hand, ſhall be unto you, and "every of you, a ſufficient Warrant in this Behalf at all times hereafter.

"Given under Our Signet, at Our Caſtle of Windſor, the Tenth Day of "June, in the xviii Year of Our Reign."

Bibl. Cot. Veſpaſian, C.xvi.

* V. Antea, p. 22.

† Roper's Life of Sir Thomas More.

‡ Pere Daniel de la Milice Françoiſe, Tom. II. p. 115. Qto. 1724. The *Partiſans*, borne formerly by theſe French Guards, had *Fringes* of *Silver*, depending from the Top of their Shafts. [v. L'Etat de la France of the Year 1682.

Embroidery is mentioned in the above-given Order of K. Hen. VIII. but, excepting the Union Roſe on the Backs and Breaſts of the *Yeomen*, nothing of that ſort is diſcernible in the ſtained Drawing of the Proceſſion above-mentioned, more than a little Finiſh of Gold Embroidery about the neck.

Q. Mary ſeems to have enriched the Dreſs of her *Yeomen* very much, as well as to have enlarged the Corps, as has been before ſuggeſted, whereby it has appeared, that no leſs than 1000l. (a very great Sum at that time) was allowed for the Article of Spangles alone for the Coats of her *Yeomen* of the *Guard*, and a few of her menial Servants *. The Trunk-hoſe continued in uſe during the Reign of Q. Elizabeth, as we have ſeen from an engraved monumental Effigies mentioned before †.

It muſt be ſuppoſed, that the mode of Dreſs in every Reign had ſome little Effect on the Habits of the Yeomen, or their Appendages, till eſtabliſhed in their preſent form, after which they grew every day ſtill more ſingular.

It is well known that K. Charles II. by his own Example [A. D. 1666], introduced a Mode of Apparel different from that of his Father and his immediate anceſtors, when, inſtead of a Doublet, he wore "a long veſt reaching to the Middle of the "Leg, with the Sword girt over it ‡;" and it is from this Æra

1682. Tom. I. p. 204. Duod]. The *Partiſans* of the Yeoman have, in like manner, a *Fringe* or *Caul* (as it is termed) of mixed Silk of the Royal Colours, viz. *White*, *Blue*, and *Red*, which appears from the Warrant to the Maſter of the Great Wardrobe, A. D. 1761, to provide *Partiſans*, &c. for his Majeſty's Coronation.

* See before, p. 27.

† P. 30. in the Note.

‡ Echard's Hiſt. of Engl. II. p. 836.

that

that I date the preſent Form of the Coats of the *Yeomen*, who alſo wear the *Sword-Belt* in the ſame manner, with the Addition of the *Shoulder-Belt*, bend-wiſe, from the Left to the Right. There can be no doubt that the *Shoulder-Belt* was introduced for the purpoſe of ſlinging the *Carbine*; for in the annual Warrant for the Cloathing and Equipment of the *Yeomen* theſe *Belts* are ſtill call'd *Carbine-Belts*. It has been already obſerv'd that when the Corps was reduc'd to *One Hundred* Men, in the Reign of K. Charles II. one Half of them carried the *Carbine*, and the other the *Partiſan*. At that time the *Croſs-Belt* being peculiar to the *Carbineers*, the Warrants of the laſt Century accordingly direct *Fifty* ſuch *Belts* to iſſue annually; whereas now, though the *Carbines* are laid aſide as to general Uſe, the *Shoulder-Belt* is extended to the whole Corps of *One Hundred* Men, by the Warrant, though perhaps it may be merely for the ſake of Uniformity in their Appearance. The *Warders* of the Tower, having always been more ſtationary, and never having carried the *Carbine*, do not wear the *Shoulder-Belt*. *Buſkins*, or ſhort Boots, were the external common Dreſs of the Legs in the Reign of K. Charles II. and were probably worn by the *Yeomen*: but when theſe were ſucceeded by Shoes, and the Stockings became more conſpicuous, the *Yeomen* were furniſhed with Scarlet Hoſe, which continued in Uſe even in the Reign of K. George II. This occaſion'd Baron Bielfeld, who was in England in the Year 1741, to ſay, that our *Yeomen* of the *Guard* (the *Anglo-Suiſſes* as he calls them) were as red as Lobſters *.

Thus

* Baron Bielfeld's Letters, Vol. III. p. 29, Duod. The Colour of the Stockings was afterwards chang'd to *blue*. When the *Earl of Aylesford* took

Thus much, Sir, for the *Habit* of the YEOMEN, a matter too well known to have been inſiſted on, even in a Memoir of this ſort, but that the Account, already cited, appears, on examination, not to tally with the *Dreſs* of the Times to which we are referred. Be its Antiquity what it may, it is at preſent *an Unique*, and the ſingular Appearance of this Body of Men adds no ſmall Dignity to the Court.

The *Officers* of the *Corps* wear a *Royal Uniform*, lac'd or embroider'd agreeably to the Fancy of the CAPTAIN, ſubject to the KING's Approbation; the reſt of their Dreſs being of white Cloth, according to the preſent military Mode. Their Diſtinction of Rank, below the *Captain*, is only diſcernible (and that on a cloſe Inſpection) from the Difference in the Heads of their Ebony *Batons* of Office. The CAPTAIN's is of wrought Gold; while thoſe of the *Lieutenant* and other *Officers* are of ſimilar Workmanſhip in ſilver with ſome ſmall Variations. The *Baton* of the *Clerk of the Cheque* is indeed of late Introduction, of which a word or two may be added.

It is not decidedly known whether the *Clerk of the Cheque* even wore the *Uniform* in the laſt Reign, there being no Perſon in the Corps now living old enough to remember the Circumſtance: and as the late Savile Cockayne Cuſt, Eſq. after having been made *Clerk of the Cheque*, A. D. 1738, was appointed *Enſign*, A. D. 1746, and of courſe wore the *Uniform* as ſuch, the former Office was externally merg'd in the latter. Mr. Cuſt, in the decline of Life, ſold the Poſt of *Enſign*, reſerving the

the Command (1785) his Lordſhip order'd that, in lieu of Shoe-Buckles, the *Yeomen* ſhould wear *Roſes* of red Leather, which are very conſonant with the reſt of their Dreſs.

Office

Office of *Clerk of the Cheque*, which he held till his Death; but never appear'd at the Court, on publick Days, after he quitted the *Enſign's* Baton. On the Deceaſe of Mr. Cuſt, however, A. D. 1772, the new *Clerk of the Cheque*, Hugh Boſcawen, Eſq. was, on the *Captain's* Application to his MAJESTY, permitted to wear the *Uniform*, and to take a Poſt in the *Guard-Room* (or *Great-Chamber*) when his MAJESTY ſhou'd paſs thro' it; but neither Mr. Boſcawen, nor his Succeſſor Thomas Gregg, Eſq. carried a *Baton*. Mr. Gregg died in office, A. D. 1787, and was replac'd by Francis Barker, Eſq. one of the Exons, who, in conformity with the *Clerk of the Cheque* of the *Gentlemen Penſioners*, was allow'd a *Baton* of Office, as appears from the following Entry in the Minute-Books of the Corps.

"July 5th, 1787.

"This Day, by the King's Command, The EARL OF AYLES-"FORD, *Captain* of the *Yeomen* of the *Guard*, gave a *Staff* to "Francis Barker, Eſq. *Clerk of the Cheque*, and order'd him "to carry the ſame whenever he attended on his MAJESTY."

The *Officers* renew their *Uniforms* every third Year, at their private Expence; but thoſe of the *Yeomen* and *Warders* are furniſh'd annually from the Wardrobe on the KING's *Birth-Day*.

I have now brought you, Sir, to the preſent Time, and ſhall only further trouble you with a few collateral Matters which may not improperly have a Place here, as the Documents whence they are taken are now before me.

It would be foreign from my purpoſe to enter into the minutiæ of Duty incumbent on the *Yeomen*, or to ſpecify the Number in actual Employment from time to time—their Subdiviſions—their Deſtinations in office on the King and Queen—or their occaſional Functions. There are, nevertheleſs, ſome ſtanding Rules and *Orders* for their interior Government, deriv'd from the Authority of their *Captains* at different Periods, which may not improperly be here recorded as corroborating the *Ordinances* of the *Crown*, and which, when obſerv'd, tend to the *Honour of the* CORPS. But let us firſt advert to general Laws for the Puniſhment of Offences.

In a Body of Men of this Rank, not ſubject to corporal Puniſhment, *Mulcts* for Miſdemeanours ſuch as neglect of Duty, &c. and *Degradation* (ſometimes follow'd by Expulſion) for political Offences againſt the State muſt neceſſarily be the impending Puniſhments. Even the *Gentlemen-Penſioners*, in their meridian, were not exempted from theſe Inflictions, which were indeed the Modes of Correction common to every Office within the Pale of the Royal Houſhold *. In a *Corps*, therefore, of

* Among other Puniſhments in ancient Royal Eſtabliſhments the following is remarkable. There was in the Houſhold of King Edward IV. a *Table* in the Hall ſupplied only with *Bread* and *Water*, at which Delinquents underwent a publick bodily Mortification for ſlight Offences. The Article in the Houſhold Ordinances runs thus—

"If any Man come too late to Mattyns upon the Hollyday, that is to ſay, after "the thirde Leſſon, he ſhall ſytt at the *Water-Boarde*, and have nothinge "unto his *Dynner* but *Bread* and *Water*; and if he abſente himſelf wilfullye, he "ſhall thus be puniſhed whenſoever he comes to *Dynner* or *Supper* †."

† From "A Collection of Ordinances and Regulations for the Government of the Royal Houſehold, made "in divers Reigns." Publiſhed by the Society of Antiquaries, 1790, 4to. p. 32.

ſuch

ſuch Magnitude as the Yeomen, a *Clerk of the Cheque* was peculiarly requiſite to aſcertain and report to the Superior in Command ſuch of the Parties as neglected the Duty of Office. In leſs numerous Departments of the Court there was a natural and obvious Subordination; as by the Statutes of Eltham (for example) the immediate Superior in every Office was enjoin'd to controll the Conduct of the Inferior; but at the ſame time in large and numerous Bodies of equal Rank the Superviſion could not be correct, and the Attendance aſcertainable without the Interference of an Officer functionally appropriated to it. Neither the CAPTAIN of the *Gentlemen-Penſioners*, nor of the *Yeomen of the Guard*, could be ſuppoſed to apply minutely to the perſonal Appearance of every Individual on the Rota of Duty from time to time; and therefore the Office of *Clerk of the Cheque* early aroſe in both theſe Corps, for the Dignity, as well as for the Eaſe, of the CAPTAINS reſpectively.

The *Clerk of the Cheque*, then, is the Perſon on whom the CAPTAIN of the *Yeomen* depends for regulating the Diviſions of the Corps, and on whom likewiſe the *Exon* on Duty relies for a Liſt of the Men on each Diviſion in actual Service, on greater and ſmaller Occaſions. This laſt-mention'd Officer in caſe of Contumacy, or ill Behaviour, is bound to report the Delinquents to the CAPTAIN, who orders them to be *cheque'd* in their Pay, in proportion to the Offence, by the *Clerk of the Cheque*: for the latter has no diſcretional Power in himſelf to levy Penalties, which are always in the Breaſt of the CAPTAIN as the Ultimatum of every Appeal. The ancient Mode of *Cheque-ing* was by an Order from the CAPTAIN, directed to the Office from whence the Pay iſſued, to ſtop a certain proportion of the

Stipend

Stipend of a Delinquent out of the next Payment *. Theſe Deductions, it is preſum'd, formerly reverted to the Crown; but of late years they have been paid by the offending parties at the moment into the hands of the *Exon* in Waiting, and form'd a *Stock-Purſe* to anſwer contingent Occaſions of the Corps, and have ſometimes been applied to benevolent Purpoſes †. Theſe pecuniary Impoſts, however, have in ſome Caſes extended to the *Officers*; for an Order may be found, whereby an *Exon*, next on the Rota, who ſhall neglect to relieve the *Exon on Duty* at the Expiration of the Kalendar-month, may be liable to the Payment of Ten-Shillings, for every Day's Default, to the *Exon* ſo detain'd in Office. The Poſt could not be entirely evacuated without prejudice to the King's Service; and therefore the *Exon* in Office was bound to remain on Guard till reliev'd by the next in the Routine; in conſequence of which eſtabliſh'd principle of Diſcipline the Charge of Contumacy reſted upon him who did not appear to exonerate ſuch Officer *in Waiting* at the End of the time preſcrib'd. This Order was put in Force in the Year 1740, when an *Exon* was accordingly *cheque'd Ten Shillings* for every Day while he omitted to relieve the *Exon on Duty* in the preceding Month, and the *Fine* was actually paid ‡.

* The old Stipend ran *per diem*, and the ancient Mulcts conſiſted of the Defalcation of Pay for a certain number of Days, according to the Nature of the Offence. The Quarterly Account, ſign'd, from time to time, by the *Captain* for the Payment of the *Corps*, and which is ſuppoſed to contain theſe Fines, is ſtill call'd *The Cheque-Roll*.

† *Five Yeomen* were ſuſpended A. D. 1740, and each was fin'd *Ten Shillings*, which Sum was given in part to a *Widow* (moſt probably the Relict of a *Yeoman*) in neceſſitous Circumſtances. [Minute-Books.]

‡ The Penalty was levied by order of the CAPTAIN (The *Earl of Eſſex*) addreſſed to the *Clerk* of the *Cheque*. [Minute-Books.]

I ſhall

I ſhall now, Sir, cloſe this Memoir with the following

ORDERS

"To be Obſerved by the YEOMEN of the GUARD*.

1. "THAT in the Abſence of the CAPTAIN, *Lieutenant*, or "*Enſigne*, the *Exon* in waiting doe take ſpecial care that the "Men perform their Duty, and that they obey ſuch *Orders* and "Directions as he ſhall think neceſſary for the keeping Decency "and Decorum in his Majeſty's Palace, and in ſuch other "Places where any of the *Guard* ſhall be in waiting, and that none "preſume to diſobey or neglect to execute ſuch *Orders* and "Directions: and if any Diſorder or Diſturbance ſhall ariſe, "that he quell the ſame, and acquaint the CAPTAIN with it as "ſoon as may be. But if it ſhould happen that no *Officer* "ſhould be then preſent, the *Uſher* or *Uſhers* of ſuch Wait or "Waits wherein ſuch Diſturbance or Diſorder ſhall happen, "are hereby ordered to turn the Offender or Offenders out of "the *Guard-Chamber*, or ſuch other place where they ſhall be in "waiting, and immediately to acquaint the *Exon* in waiting "therewith, who is to examine the Matter thereof, and report "the ſame to the CAPTAIN.

2. "THAT no Man preſume to wait for more than one Man "(that is to ſay) that when the Man waiting for another hath "performed ſuch Wait, he ſhall not be permitted to wait again, "ſo as to continue his Wait for divers Men one after another.

* Theſe ORDERS were firſt iſſued by the *Duke of Mancheſter*, and were ſigned by the *Clerk of the Cheque*, A. D. 1738 or 1739, and are here enforced by the *Viſcount Torrington*, who was CAPTAIN, from January 1746 to January 1747.

"And

" And that no Man whatſoever ſhall be permitted to wait for " another in manner aforeſaid, without Notice given to the " *Officer* in waiting, and in his Abſence to the *Yeoman-Uſher* in " waiting, who are to approve of or refuſe the ſame as they " ſhall reſpectively think fit; and are hereby obliged to enter his " Name in the Bill for his Duty where it has not been done be- " fore by the *Clerk* of the *Cheque*; and whoever waits for another " Man he is to wear the Cloaths of the Man he waits for during " that Duty.

3. " THAT all Duty further than *Windſor* be as equally laid " as poſſible, Wait after Wait, as they lie in the general Bill " throughout the whole Band; and that no Man preſume to " go on foot the major part of the way of any Journey beyond " *Windſor*, where the Royal Bounty-Money is allowed, upon " Forfeiture of his or their ſhare of ſuch Bounty-Money among " the reſt of the Wait then and there in waiting *. And that no " Man pretend to enter the *Guard Chamber* where his MAJESTY is " Reſident without a *Sword*, on the Penalty of forfeiting Half " a Crown for ſuch Offence to the Guard there in waiting.

4. " THAT according to an ancient Cuſtom, upon the Death " of any of the *Guard*, his ſucceſſor coming into his place and " ſworn within ſix Weeks of the Time of receiving new Cloaths,

* This part of the *third* Article ſeems to have been inſerted on the latter promulgation of the Orders in the Year 1747, at which time *Frederick Prince of Wales* and his *Conſort*, had their Summer Reſidence at *Cliefden* in Buckinghamſhire, about 7 or 8 Miles beyond Windſor; and where, it is preſumed, a Detachment of the *Yeomen* were ſtationed, and periodically relieved. *Riding Charges* were a cuſtomary Allowance as far as Windſor, and the *Bounty-Money* here mentioned ſeems to have been an additional Stipend proportioned to the Extra-Diſtance.

" ſhall

" ſhall have his Predeceſſor's *Coat* and *Cap* to wait in upon payment " of *Five Pounds* for the ſame to the *Widow*; and he ſhall be ob- " liged to return the ſaid *Coat* and *Cap* to the *Widow* again " upon having new ones within the time aforeſaid: But if the " Succeſſor ſhall not have new ones within the Time afore- " ſaid, then he is to retain the ſaid *Coat* and *Cap* to his own " uſe, and is only to pay the *Widow* the *Five Pounds* afore- " ſaid.

5. " Whereas it has been obſerved of late Time, that ſeverall " of the *Guard*, to the great Diſhonour of their Service, have " been very negligent in keeping themſelves neat and clean " while they have been on Duty, having their Shoes, Stock- " ings, and Gloves dirty; and their Hair and Wiggs unpow- " dered; and not wearing the Gloves and Stockings that are " provided them by his Majeſty; and having been negligent " in keeping their Partizans clean:—IT IS ORDERED that the " *Officer* in waiting, and in his abſence the *Yeoman-Uſher* in wait- " ing, ſhall at all times hereafter take care that no ſuch Neglect " ſhall be ſuffered for the future; and that if any Man in " waiting ſhall preſume to be guilty of the like Neglect again, " the *Officer* in waiting, or the *Yeoman-Uſher* in waiting, (the " *Officer* being abſent from the Place of Waiting one day or " more) are hereby required and impowered to diſcharge ſuch " Man from his Wait, and ſupply his place with another Man, " who is to be paid for waiting out of the Salary of the Man " guilty of ſuch Neglect as aforeſaid: AND the *Officer* or *Yeo-* " *man Uſher* is to make timely Returns, at the end of each Wait, " of ſuch Neglects to the *Clerk* of the *Cheque*, who upon

" payment of the Salary is to take notice of this accord-
" ingly.

6. " AND, That if any Man neglects to give his Attendance
" in due time, in order to perform his Duty on every oc-
" caſion, when and whereſoever required, he ſhall forfeit *Five*
" *Shillings* for every ſuch Offence, at the diſcretion of the *Officer*,
" to be ſtopt by the *Clerk* of the *Cheque*, out of the next pay-
" ment, and applied to ſuch uſes as the ſaid *Officer* or *Officers*
" ſhall judge moſt proper.

7. " AND, That none may pretend ignorance of theſe OR-
" DERS, they are *Ordered* to be read once every Week at the
" Table, immediately after Dinner, untill the Waits through-
" out the whole Band have heard them; and at the firſt meet-
" ing of every *Parliament*, when the greateſt Part of the Guard
" are aſſembled at *White-Hall*, in order to attend his Majeſty
" at the *Parliament-Houſe*.

" TORRINGTON."

I ſhall cloſe this Memoir, Sir, by ſubjoining, in an Appendix, a Liſt of the ſeveral CAPTAINS of the *Corps*, collateral to that which I have already given (in Part II.) of the CAPTAINS of the *Band* of *Gentlemen Penſioners*. I cannot, however, promiſe that it ſhall be equally correct; as theſe *Officers* in earlier times (and indeed till the Beginning of the laſt Century) were not, for the moſt part, of higher Rank than *Knights*. There is a Liſt already exiſting; but it cannot be implicitly relied upon. It was firſt given, (as far as I know)

by the late Mr. John Millan, Bookſeller in Whitehall, in his "Succeſſion of Colonels to all his Majeſty's Land Forces" in the Year 1743; and has ſince been adopted by Robert Beatſon, Eſq; in his "Political Index." To this Liſt I ſhall, nevertheleſs, adhere; but as no Vouchers are given, (and ſome of the Names appear to be very doubtful) I muſt take the liberty of putting a *Quære* upon ſuch as I cannot ſupport by Authority.

I remain, Sir,

your moſt obedient

humble Servant,

SAMUEL PEGGE.

Whitehall,
Dec. 27, 1790.

POSTSCRIPT.

SINCE the ſheet (ſignature H. p. 52) was printed off, a *Reform* took place in the two *Troops* of *Horſe-Guards*, when both they, and the two *Troops* of *Grenadier Guards*, were diſcharged, and two *Regiments* of *Life-Guards* ſubſtituted in their room. Of theſe Regiments the firſt and ſecond in Command have each alternately (as *Gold* and *Silver Stick*) the ſame Duty at the Court as thoſe of the *Horſe-Guards* had; while the Rank of the *Captains* and *Subalterns* has been ſimplified conſonantly to that of other Cavalry. All therefore which has been ſaid, in the comparative view of *them* and the eſtabliſhment of the *Yeomen*, p. 53, muſt be referred to the two *Troops* of *Horſe-Guards*, as they had exiſted from the time of their Inſtitution at the Reſtoration till the above Reform.

In a note, p. 50. where the *Enſign* of the *Yeomen* is firſt mentioned, it is obſerved that no *Standard* or *Banner* has appeared. The ſame was ſaid of the *Band* of *Gentlemen-Penſioners*, upon the like occaſion, in the Memoir regarding that Eſtabliſhment in Part II. of this work, p. 20.—But a ſtained Drawing of a *Standard* for the uſe of that *Band*, A. D. 1639, has ſince been found in the collection of John Thorpe, Eſq. M. A. of Bexley in Kent, and is engraved in the Gentleman's Magazine for the month of May, 1790, with a deſcription of it; whereby it appears to have been a *Penon* ſeven feet long, with ſuitable ornaments, and appoſite devices, the ſtaff of which was nine Feet and a half in height.

In the year 1785, the following collateral circumſtance occurred; but being an incidental matter it was not inſiſted on in the Narrative. *The Earl of Aylesford*, then CAPTAIN, in honour of the original Inſtitution of the *Yeomen* as a body of *Archers*, gave *three Prizes* to be ſhot for with the long Bow by *ten* of the *Yeomen*, to be allotted to the *three* beſt *point-blank* Shots, at the diſtance of an hundred Yards. The winner was accordingly rewarded with a *Silver Cup* of the value of *Twenty Guineas*; the ſecond-beſt received *Ten Guineas* in ſpecie; and the third *Five Guineas*. The *Cup*, which I have ſeen, was a plain *Goblet*, containing nearly two quarts, on the one ſide of which was the *Roſe* and *Thiſtle* imperially crowned, in relief, on a medallion. The inſcription round the rim of the Cup ran thus—"This *Prize-Cup*, given by the CAPTAIN to the beſt "Archer of the *Yeomen of the Guard*, was won by *Ralph Coulthard* "on Saturday the third of September, 1785."

A LIST
OF THE
CAPTAINS
OF THE
YEOMEN OF THE GUARD.

(As far as the Writer of this Memoir can collect)
from the Time of the *Inſtitution*.
A. D. 1485*.

K. HENRY VII.

JOHN (*de Vere*) EARL *of* OXFORD. — {*Millan's Liſt.* A.D. 1485. {*Mr. Beatſon's Liſt.* A.D. 1486.

2†

SIR HUGH VAUGHAN.

Date uncertain.

{See Falle's Account of Jerſey, p. 90‡.

SIR

* The Dates are given from the Times when the CAPTAINS are found in Office, when the preciſe Year of the Appointment is not diſcernible.

† There ſeems to be much difficulty in diſcovering who was the *Firſt* CAPTAIN. This Appointment, however, is left queſtionable, as not being mentioned either in "Dugdale's Baronage," or by Collins in his "Hiſtorical Collections" relative to this Family; both which Writers enumerate all the reſt of the *Earl's* Offices.

‡ A Knight of both theſe Names, who married a Daughter of Henry Percy, the 2d Earl of Northumberland of that name (and the Widow of Sir Thomas

Hungerford),

SIR CHARLES SOMERSET*. {Millan. / Mr. Beatſon.} A. D. 1488.

In Office *A. D.* 1502. [Rymer's Fœdera, Tom. XIII. p. 6.]

N B. This is the earlieſt Date that occurs to me; for in the Year 1490 he is ſtyled, in a Royal Commiſſion, "*Knight of the Body:*" (Rymer, tom. XII. p. 403.).—whereas, in a ſubſequent Commiſſion in 1502 he is called "*Captain of the Guard.*" [Rymer, Tom. XIII. p. 6.]

SIR THOMAS D'ARCY.
A. D. . . . .

In Office at the Demiſe of K. Henry VII. and attended, as *Captain of the Guard*, at his Funeral. [Ceremonial in Bibl. Harl. N° 3504, MS. but printed in the Addenda to Leland's Collectanea (1774) Vol. IV. p. 301.]†

K. HENRY

Hungerford), died A. D. 1500, and lies interred in St. Michael's Chapel in Weſtminſter Abbey. [See a Regiſter of Perſons buried in the Abbey. Ln°. 1603, ſmall 4to. ſuppoſed to have been collected by Mr. Camden.]—But I do not decide further than Mr. Falle's authority goes.

* Millan calls him Earl of Beaufort, a Title which never exiſted. He was the illegitimate Son of Henry the 3d Duke of Somerſet, of the name of Beaufort; and by paternal deſcent was 2d couſin to K. Henry VII. He became afterwards Lord Herbert, jure uxoris; and by Creation Earl of Worceſter.

† In the above-mentioned Ceremonial he is ſtyled *Lord D'Arcy*, though at the King's death he was only a Knight: but, being ſummoned to Parliament in the

K. HENRY VIII.

SIR HENRY GULDEFORD or *Guildford.* — { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1514.

Q.*

SIR JOHN GAGE.
A. D. . . . .

{The Iriſh Peerages ſay about the Year 1513†.

SIR HENRY MARNEY.

{In Office, *A. D.* 1520. [Hall's Chronicle.]‡ — { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1521.

SIR

the firſt year of K. Henry VIII. it is ſuppoſed that the Ceremonial was not drawn up till he became a Peer. About the ſame time, he was elected a Knight of the Garter; but at length was beheaded for treaſonable Practices, A. D. 1537. He was commonly known afterwards by the Title of "Lord D'Arcy of the North," to diſtinguiſh him from the "Lord D'Arcy of Chiche" in Eſſex, in whom the Barony was revived by K. Edward the Sixth.

* The Life of Sir Henry Guldeford, who was afterwards (1526) elected a Knight of the Garter, is given by Mr. Anſtis in the firſt Volume of his Regiſter of the Order of the Garter; but it does not appear that he ever held the Poſt in queſtion. Once, indeed, he commanded a detachment of 60 Yeomen, jointly with Sir Charles Brandon, on an Expedition (A. D. 1512), which might lead to the miſtake. [See Lord Herbert and Holinſhed, ſub anno præd.]

† Buſwell, in his "Hiſtorical Account of the Knights of the Garter, 1757," Octavo, p. 167, cites "An Account of Sir John Gage, written by his third ſon Robert Gage, of Haling in Surrey," wherein it is ſaid that ſhortly after the Siege of Terouenne (1513) Sir John was, for his diſtinguiſhed valour on that occaſion, made *Captain of the Guard.*

‡ It is ſuſpected that Sir Henry Marney occupied the Poſt twice, viz. once at K. Henry's Acceſſion before Sir John Gage, and that he afterwards ſucceeded

SIR ANTHONY WINGFIELD. — *Millan.* No Date. *Mr. Beatſon.* A. D. 1536.

In Office *A. D.* 1526. See the Statutes of Houſhold made at Eltham in the Year 1526 (printed by the Society of Antiquaries, 1790); wherein Sir Anthony is mentioned by name as *Captain of the Guard*, p. 165*.

SIR WILLIAM KINGSTON, *A. D.* .... — *Millan.* *Mr. Beatſon.* A. D. 1523.

In Office, A. D. 1530, when he was ſent into Yorkſhire, as *Captain of the Guard*, to conduct Cardinal Wolſey to London. [See the preceding Memoir, p. 19, on the Authority of Hall the Chronicler, who was living at the time.] †

him. See the preceding Memoir, p. 12, where Sir Henry ſeems to have ſigned ſome Orders regarding the Yeomen officially as *Captain*, A. D. 1509; he having then no other Poſt, and where I have ventured to call him ſo. He was made Lord Privy-Seal, and created Lord Marney, A. D. 1523; when he probably evacuated the Command.

* By the Concurrence of Dates, he ſeems to have been appointed when Sir Henry Marney was elevated to the Peerage, A. D. 1523. It will appear hereafter that he held the Poſt under three ſeveral Appointments.

† Sir William Kingſton was elected Knight of the Garter, A. D. 1539; and died ſoon after, for his Will was proved, July 5, 1541.

SIR

SIR ANTHONY WINGFIELD. — *Re-appointed.*

A. D. 1540.

{Weever mentions him as *Captain of the Guard* in this Year. [Funeral Monuments.]*

K. EDWARD VI.

SIR ANTHONY WINGFIELD. — *Re-appointed.*

{In Office *A. D.* 1549.
{See Stowe's Chronicle, p. 600†.

SIR THOMAS D'ARCY. — {*Millan.* *A. D.* 1549. {*Mr. Beatſon.* *A. D.* 1550.

A. D. 1550.

{Stowe's Chronicle, and Sir Rich. Baker's Chronicle. The Succeſſion is ſpecified ‡.

* The Dates here given ſeem to warrant this Arrangement. It is certain, however, that Sir Anthony held the Poſt at the Demiſe of the King. [See the Ceremonial of the Funeral in Strype's Memorials, Vol. II. in the Appendix, p. 12.]

† He was made Comptroller of the Houſhold, A. D. 1550. [See Stowe's and Baker's Chronicle.] Died Auguſt 15, 1552

‡ Sir Thomas was created Lord D'Arcy of Chiche, April 1, 1551. [See the King's Journal.]

SIR JOHN GATES.

A. D. 1551. (*April* 8.)

See K. Edward's Journal, p. 24, (printed in Burnet's Hiſt. of the Reformation, Vol. II.) where the above date is expreſſly given *.

ROBERT WINGFIELD, ESQ.

(afterwards *Sir Robert.*)

A. D. . . .

The Date is uncertain; but his Appointment is ſuppoſed to have taken place A. D. 1552, when Sir John Gates was made *Chancellor* of the *Duchy of Lancaſter*, an Office which, preſumably, would vacate the Poſt of *Captain of the Guard* †.

* Sir John Gates was made Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaſter, July 4, 1552. [See the King's Journal.] He followed the Fortunes of the Duke of Northumberland, and was beheaded in the firſt Year of Q. Mary, Auguſt 22, 1553.

† The Authority for the fact reſts upon the Baronetage of the Year 1727, which ſeems to have been followed by the Iriſh Peerages, though the preciſe Date appears to have been miſtaken. He was the Eldeſt Son of *Sir Anthony Wingfield*; but was not knighted till the following Reign, on the Coronation of Q. Mary, A. D. 1553. [See a Liſt of Knights made on that Occaſion in Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. Appendix, p. 11.] Sir John Hayward, and ſome other Hiſtorians, confound him with his Father *Sir Anthony* in the Tranſactions of the Year 1549, regarding the Duke of Somerſet.

2. MARY.

SIR HENRY JERNEGAN, or *Jerningham*.

A. D. 1553, *(July* 31.)

{Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 17.

{*Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.*} *A. D.* 1553.

SIR HENRY BEDINGFIELD.

A. D. 1555. *(October* 28.)

{Blomefield's Hiſtory of Norfolk, Vol. III. p. 481. See alſo Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 387, whence it diſtinctly appears that he ſucceeded *Sir Henry Jerningham*; though Mr. Strypes's Date is December 25, *A. D.* 1557.

QUEEN ELIZABETH.

SIR EDWARD ROGERS.

A. D. 1558.

{Strype's Introduction to his Annals, p. 5, from the Regiſter-Books of the Council-Office*.

SIR

* A knightly Family of the Name was ſeated at Brianſton, Co. Dorſet, in this Reign. [Camden's Britannia.] A Sir Edward Rogers, was Comptroller of the Houſhold, according to Mr. Beatſon's Liſt of them in his Political

 Index,

SIR WILLIAM ST. LOO. — {*Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.*} *A. D.* 1558.

A. D. . . . .

The Appointment itſelf appears from Dugdale's Baronage, Vol. II p. 420—from Collins's Hiſtorical Collections, p. 14—and from Biſhop Kennet's Hiſtory of the Family of Cavendiſh: but I do not find any Date of the time of his Death *.

SIR FRANCIS KNOLLYS. — {*Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.*} *A. D.* 1569.

In Office *A. D.* 1566. Wood's Athenæ Oxonienſes, Vol. I. Col. 286 †.

Index, A. D. 1560; and I preſume is the ſame Perſon who, in that Character, attended Queen Elizabeth at Oxford, 1566, and was then created, with ſeveral other Perſons of Diſtinction, a Maſter of Arts. Ant. Wood calls him Comptroller, but had not learned his Chriſtian name or Title. [Athenæ Oxonienſes, Vol. I. Faſti. Col. 99.]

* He was in the Poſt when he married the Relict of Sir William Cavendiſh (afterwards Counteſs of Shrewſbury); but the Date of that Marriage does not appear.

† For want of knowing the Time of *Sir William St. Loo's* Death or Reſignation, the preciſe Date of Sir Francis Knollys's appointment is here left doubtful. He was High Steward of the Univerſity of Oxford, when the Queen viſited it, 1566, and was created Maſter of Arts on that occaſion, which brought him within the Cognizance of Anthony Wood (as above cited) who calls him "CAPTAIN of the *Halbertiers*."

SIR

SIR CHRISTOPHER HATTON.
A.D. 1572, (*July* 13.)

{*Millan.*
Mr. Beatſon.} *A.D.* 1578.

Holinſhed, p. 1864, and Stowe, p. 673, fix the above Date, and call him *Chriſtopher Hatton, Eſq.* for he was not knighted till the Year 1577. [See a Liſt of the Queen's Knights in Morgan's Sphere of Gentry.] He was in Office, *A.D.* 1586. [Camden's Elizabeth] and in the following Year was made *Lord Chancellor* *.

SIR ANTHONY PAULET,
(or *Powlet.*)

Date uncertain.

No Authority is yet found for this Appointment except Collins's Peerages (Art. Earl Powlet) in the Editions of 1735 and 1779.

2†.

* The Succeſſion of the three laſt-mentioned Captains is aſcertained by a Paper in the Hand-writing of the Lord Treaſurer Burleigh, publiſhed by Mr. Strype. [Annals, Vol. II. N° 35, of the Appendix.] The exact Dates, therefore, of their reſpective Appointments, are leſs material.

† The Perſon here meant was the eldeſt ſurviving Son and Heir of the ſecond Sir Amyas Powlet.

SIR HENRY GOODERE. — {Millan. / Mr. Beatſon.} A. D. 1587.

In Office, *A. D.* 1586. Knighted by the Earl of Leiceſter, the Queen's Lieutenant in the Low Countries, where he had a Command, *A. D.* 1586, on which occaſion he is called *Captain of the Guard.* [Stowe's Chronicle, p. 739.] *

..... BEST, ESQ. — {Millan. / Mr. Beatſon.} No Date. A. D. 1592.

2.—

But ſee the Peerages under the Article Viſcount Bolingbroke, and Collins's Baronetage, 1720. Vol. I. p. 131. †

* The firſt Baronet of this Name (created A. D. 1707) is ſuppoſed to have been of the ſame Family, if not a Deſcendant of Sir Henry.

† I give this Appointment in the Order here placed, becauſe it is found ſo in Millan's, and in Mr. Beatſon's Liſt. The Story runs, that Sir Oliver St. John killed in a Duel "One BEST *Captain of the Guard* to Queen Elizabeth, "and *Champion of England*," for which he was forced to leave the Kingdom. Millan, though he gives no Date of the Appointment of Mr. Beſt, ſays that he was killed about the Year 1597. I incline to regard Mr. Beſt's firſt Title as apocryphal, and think that the latter was probably only the deriſional Appellation of a *Drawcanſir.* As to the Championſhip, it had continued, where it now reſts, in the Family of *Dymoke* for ſome Centuries; and it appears, from the Ceremonial in the College of Arms, that *Sir Edward Dymoke* officiated in perſon at the Coronation of Queen Elizabeth. But not to deſtroy Mr. *Beſt's* Title entirely, ſee the next Article.

SIR

SIR WALTER RALEIGH.

{*Millan.* } *No Date.*
{*Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1597.

[In Office, *A. D.* 1587. He is ſtyled *Captain of the Guard* in the Dedication of the 4th Voyage in Hackluyt's Collection, publiſhed, *A. D.* 1587. Sir Walter is likewiſe mentioned as *Captain* in Camden's Hiſtory of Queen Elizabeth *A. D.* 1595:—and it appears that he attended the Execution of the Earl of Eſſex, with a Party of the Yeomen, as *Captain of the Guard*, Feb. 2. *A. D.* 1601. *N.S.* [See Gordon's Lives and Trials in the Life of Sir Walter, and the Note below *.]

* It ſeems moſt probable, by the Compariſon of Dates, that Sir Walter Raleigh ſucceeded Sir Henry Goodere. It muſt, however, be allowed that Sir Walter did not occupy the Poſt entirely without interruption; for he was baniſhed the Court, and impriſoned for ſome months, 1595, on account of an Amour with one of the Queen's Maids of Honour, whom he ſoon afterwards married, and upon his Releaſe ſailed for Guiana. Mr. *Beſt* above-mentioned, therefore, (if he ever held the Poſt of *Captain*) might poſſibly ſupply this ſhort Vacancy. After Sir Walter was reſtored, which was A. D. 1596, [See Prince's Worthies of Devon], we have the Sanction of Sir Robert Naunton, then a living witneſs, to ſay that he continued *Captain*, and high in the Queen's favor, till her death. [Fragmenta Regalia.] This is further confirmed from a Drawing of the Proceſſion at the Queen's Funeral, now in the Muſeum, (and engraved by the Society of Antiquaries, 1791), in which Sir Walter walked alone at the Head of the Yeomen as CAPTAIN *of the Guard.*

K. JAMES I.

LORD ERSKINE. afterwards Viſcount *Fenton*, and Earl of *Kelly*. — *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* — *A. D.* 1603.

A. D. 1603.

See Douglas's Peerage of Scotland, [Art. Earl of Kelly,] where it is expreſſly ſaid that he was appointed on the Conviction of Sir Walter Raleigh, *A.* D. 1603 *.

SIR HENRY RICH, K. B. afterwards Lord *Kenſington*, and Earl of *Holland*. — *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* — *A. D.* 1617.

A. D. 1617. (*November* 5.)

See Dugdale's Baronage, where, on the authority of Camden's Annalium Apparatus, it is ſaid that the Viſcount *Fenton* ſurrendered the Poſt to *Sir Henry Rich* upon a Compoſition.

* His Lordſhip, when Sir Thomas Erſkine, had been inſtrumental in ſaving the King's Life from the Gowrie Conſpiracy, for which Service he was created Lord Erſkine of Dirleton, A. D. 1603, before King James acceded to the Crown of England. In the Year 1606 he was made Viſcount *Fenton*;—dignified with the Order of the Garter, A. D. 1615;—and advanced to the Earldom of *Kelly*, A. D. 1619.

K. CHARLES

K. CHARLES I.

HENRY *(Rich)* EARL OF HOLLAND.	*Re-appointed.*	
In Office December 30, 1625. [See Rymer's Fœdera, Tom. XVIII. p. 256.]		
THOMAS *(Wentworth)* EARL OF CLEVELAND.		
A. D. 1625.		
Dugdale's Baronage *.		
SIR CHRISTOPHER MUSGRAVE, *Knt. and Bart.*	*Millan.*	*No Date.*
	Mr. Beatſon.	*A. D.* 1630.
2 †.		

* His Lordſhip was afterwards made *Captain of the Band of Gentlemen-Penſioners* on the Reſtoration of King Charles II.

N. B. In my Liſt of thoſe *Captains* he is erroneouſly named *Henry*.

† The perſon here meant was evidently the third Son of Sir Philip Muſgrave, the ſecond Baronet of that Branch of the Family ſeated at Hartley-Caſtle in Weſtmoreland. The miſtake ſeems to have ariſen from a Circumſtance which appears in Collins's Baronetage of the Year 1720, viz. that Sir *Chriſtopher*, in reward for Services to King Charles I. was complimented with a *Captain's* Commiſſion in the *Guards* ſoon after the Reſtoration, together with the Honour of Knighthood, and afterwards ſucceeded to the Baronetage.

GEORGE (2d) EARL OF KINNOUL. — *Omitted by Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon, A. D. 1632.*

A. D. . . . .

Douglas's Peerage of Scotland.

WILLIAM (*7th*) Earl of Morton. — *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* — *A. D. 1635.*

A. D. 1635.

Douglas's Peerage of Scotland. In Office 1641. [See Curialia, Part II. p. 67.]

K. CHARLES II. — *Millan.* *omitted.* / *Mr. Beatſon in his ſecond Edit.* — *A. D. 1662.*

GEORGE (*Goring*) EARL OF NORWICH.

A. D. 1660, (*June* 2.)

Lord Chamberlain's Office-Books:—and Dugdale's Baronage *.

* Mr. Beatſon has omitted the *Earl of Norwich* in his firſt Edition; and in his ſecond, has been led into a falſe Chriſtian Name and Date; having confounded *George*, the firſt Earl of Norwich of the Name of *Goring*, who died A. D. 1662 with *Charles* his ſon, who never held the Poſt of Captain of the Yeomen.

GEORGE

GEORGE *(Villiers)* VISCOUNT GRANDISON. — *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* — *No Date.* / *A. D.* 1660.

A. D. 1662, (*October* 3.)

Lord Chamberlain's Office-Books, wherein the Appointment is expreſſed to have been "in the room of the *Earl of Norwich* deceaſed."

K. JAMES II.

VISCOUNT GRANDISON. — *Re-appointed.*

In Office A. D. 1687, as appears from Chamberlayne's Preſent State of that Year *.

* His Lordſhip ſeems to have retired with Honour at the Revolution; for in the Books of the Treaſurer of the Chamber of the Year 1690, we find the Payment of an annual Penſion of 1000 l. to the Viſcount Grandiſon, wherein he is ſtyled *late Captain of the Yeomen*; which Entry immediately follows the Payments made to the Officers and Yeomen then in the Corps.

K. WILLIAM

K. WILLIAM and Q. MARY.

CHARLES EARL OF MANCHESTER. *A. D.* 1689.

{*Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.*} *A.D.* 1689.

In Office at the Coronation of the KING and QUEEN April 11, 1689. [Collins's Peerage, Edit. 1735.] The Proceedings in Council prove that he held the Poſt in the following Month of June [See the Memoir, pp. 72, 73.]* His Lordſhip is found to have been *Captain*, *A. D.* 1694, in Chamberlayne's Preſent State of that Year; and according to all Collins's Peerages reſigned the Office when he was appointed Secretary of State, *A. D.* 1702.

* His Lordſhip's Appointment, as given in the Editions of Collins's Peerage, 1735 and 1779, (where it is dated March 23, 1692-3) muſt therefore be erroneous.

Q. ANNE

QUEEN ANNE.

MARQUIS OF HARTINGTON. { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1702.

afterwards (the 2d) Duke of *Devonſhire*.

A. D. 1702.

{ Collins's Peerage, Edit. 1735. —Groves's Lives of the Earls and Dukes of Devonſhire *.

CHARLES VISCOUNT TOWNSHEND. { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1707.

A. D. 1707.

{ His Lordſhip's Appointment is in the Gazette, and dated November 16, 1707. He reſigned *A. D.* 1711. [Annals of Q. Anne.]

* The Marquis held the Poſt till he became *Duke of Devonſhire*, when he ſucceeded his Father in the Office of Lord Steward of the Houſhold, A. D. 1707. [See the Authorities above-cited.]

HON. HENRY PAGET. {*Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.*} *A. D.* 1714.

afterwards created Baron *Burton*, and at length the firſt Earl of *Uxbridge*.

A. D. 1711, (*June* 13.)

Collins's Peerage, Edit. 1735*.

K. GEORGE I.

HENRY *(Paget)* LORD BURTON. *Re-appointed.*

{See the Note to the preceding Article.

* Mr. *Paget*, when appointed Captain, June 13, 1711, was the ſurviving Son of William the 6th Lord *Paget*; and on the 31ſt of December, in the ſame Year, was created Baron *Burton* in the Life-time of his Father, who died 1713. His Lordſhip was continued in the Poſt for a little while by K. George I.—was made Earl of *Uxbridge* October 19, 1714—and reſigned his Employment 1715. [See the Peerages.]

JAMES

JAMES EARL OF DERBY. { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1715.

A. D. 1715. (*September* 23.)

Collins's Peerages.

LORD STANHOPE. { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1723.

afterwards the 4th Earl of *Cheſterfield.*

A. D. 1723.

Gazette.

JOHN (*Sidney*) EARL OF LEICESTER. { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1725.

A. D. 1725.

{ Gazette;—wherein the Appointment is expreſſly ſaid to have been *Vice* Lord *Stanhope.*

K. GEORGE II.

THE EARL OF LEICESTER.		*Re-appointed.*
{In Office at the Coronation, 1727. Gazette *.		
CHARLES (2d) EARL OF TANKERVILLE.	{*Millan.* *Mr. Beatſon.*	*Omitted.* *A. D.* 1733.
2†		
JOHN (1st) EARL OF ASHBURNHAM. *A. D.* 1731.	{*Millan.* *Mr. Beatſon.*	*A. D.* 1731.

* His Lordſhip was made Conſtable of the Tower, Auguſt 13, 1731. [Gazette.] From which time the Poſt of *Captain* was kept vacant till the 23d of the following November. During this Interval the *Lieutenant* (Thomas Windham, Eſq.) was directed to take full Command of the Corps; and a Yeoman dying, he had the Appointment of a Succeſſor. [Minute-Books of the Corps.]

† There is reaſon to believe that this Appointment is erroneous, as Collins's Peerages give the ſame Date of the Year to the *Earl of Tankerville*, and the *Earl of Aſhburnham*, viz. 1731, which laſt is confirmed by other Authorities.

Edmondſon's

Edmondſon's Baronagium. Collins's Peerages of the Years 1735. and 1779 *.

WILLIAM (2d) DUKE OF MANCHESTER. { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1737.

A. D. 1737. (*October* . . .)
Collins's Peerage †.

WILLIAM (3d) EARL OF ESSEX. { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1739.

A. D. 1739.
Gazette ‡.

* Edmondſon, in his Baronagium, is ſilent as to the Appointment of the *Earl of Tankerville*, and gives it to the *Earl of Aſhburnham*, A. D. 1731, who died in the Poſt March 10, 1737, N. S. Another doubt will ſeem to follow upon his Lordſhip's Death as to his Succeſſor, who, Salmon's Chronological Hiſtorian tells us, was the *Duke of Chandos:* but this is not ſupported by any other Teſtimony. On the contrary, it appears, from the Minute-Books of the Corps, that the *Lieutenant* (Hon. John Sherard) took the Command during the Vacancy till the following October, and had the Nomination of two Yeomen, one in July, and the other early in October, in the courſe of which Month the *Duke of Mancheſter* received his Appointment.

† His Grace died in the Command, 1739. [Gazette.]

‡ His Lordſhip died in Office, 1743. [Gazette.]

JOHN

JOHN LORD BERKELEY OF STRATTON. — { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1743.

A. D. 1743.

Gazette.

PATTEE (*Byng*) 2d VISCOUNT TORRINGTON. — { *Millan, A. D.* 1745. / *Mr. Beatſon, A. D.* 1746.

A. D. 1746.

Collins's Peerage *.

HUGH (2d) VISCOUNT FALMOUTH. — { *Millan.* / *Mr. Beatſon.* } *A. D.* 1747.

A. D. 1747.

N. B. *Millan's Liſt ends here.*

K. GEORGE III.

HUGH VISCOUNT FALMOUTH †. *Re-appointed.*

* His Lordſhip died in the Poſt, A. D. 1747. [Collins's Peerage.]

† The Viſcount Falmouth died Captain, February 4, 1782.

JOHN-

JOHN-FREDERICK DUKE OF DORSET. — *Mr. Beatſon, A. D. 1782.*

A. D. 1782.

GEORGE-JAMES EARL OF CHOLMONDELY. — *Mr. Beatſon, A. D. 1783.*

A. D. 1783.
Gazette.

HENEAGE EARL OF AYLESFORD. — *Mr. Beatſon, A. D. 1783.*

A. D. 1784. (*January* 2.)
Gazette.

JOHN-FREDERICK DUKE OF DORSET. M. Dorset, A.D. 178[illegible].

A. D. 178[illegible].

GEORGE-JAMES EARL OF CHOLMONDELEY. M. Cholm. A.D. 178[illegible].

A.D. 178[illegible].

Gazette.

[illegible] EARL OF [illegible] M. [illegible], A. D. 178[illegible].

[illegible]

Gazette.

MVSEVM BRITAN NICVM